

THE
H I S T O R Y
AND
A D V E N T U R E S
OF THE RENOWNED
DON QUIXOTE.

TRANSLATED FROM THE SPANISH OF
MIGUEL DE CERVANTES SAAVEDRA.

To which is prefixed,
Some ACCOUNT of the AUTHOR's Life.

By T. SMOLLET, M. D.

Illustrated with Sixteen Copperplates, elegantly engraved.

THE SIXTH EDITION CORRECTED.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

L O N D O N:

Printed for A. LAW, W. MILLER, and R. CATER.
MDCCXCIII.



D

Of the

T

who
lost,
we c
amu
only
also
artf
twi
tinu
J
tion

THE
ATC HIEVEMENTS
OF THE SAGE AND VALIANT KNIGHT
DON QUIXOTE
DE LA MANCHA.

PART I. BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

Of the new and agreeable adventure that happened to the curate and barber in the brown mountain.

THREE happy and fortunate was that age which produced the most audacious knight Don Quixote de la Mancha, in consequence of whose honourable resolution to restore and revive the lost, and, as it were, buried order of knight-errantry; we of these times, barren and unfruitful of sprightly amusements, enjoy the agreeable entertainment, not only of his own true and delightful adventures; but also the intervening episodes, which are no less real, artful, and delicious, than the main history itself, the twisted, reeled, and ravelled thread of which is continued thus.

Just as the curate was ready to offer some consolation to Cardenio, he was prevented by a voice that saluted

THE ATCHIEVEMENTS OF

luted his ears in these mournful accents: "Would to God! I could find a place to serve as a private tomb for this wearisome burthen of life, which I bear so much against my inclination! this very spot will yield me what I ask, if I can trust the solitary appearance of these mountains. Alas! how much more agreeable is the company of these rocks and thickets, which give me opportunities of complaining to heaven, than that of faithless man; since nature hath not created one of whom I could reasonably expect advice in difficulty, comfort in affliction, or remedy in distress!"

This exclamation was distinctly overheard by the priest and his company, who concluding that the person who spoke must be hard by, arose to make further inquiry, and had not gone twenty paces, when behind the fragment of a rock they perceived a boy sitting under an ash-tree, in the habit of a peasant, whose face, as he stooped, in order to wash his feet in a brook that murmured by him, they could not then survey. Their approach they managed with softness and silence, while his whole attention was employed in bathing his legs, that seemed two crystal pillars, which had been produced among the pebbles in the rill. They were surprised at the whiteness and beauty of his feet, which they could not believe had been formed to tread the clods, and follow the cattle or plough, as his dress would have seemed to intimate; and the curate, who went foremost, finding himself still unperceived by the youth, made signs to the rest to crouch down, or hide themselves behind a neighbouring rock. This being done, all three stood gazing attentively at the apparition, which was clad in a double skirted grey jacket, girt about the middle with a white napkin, and wore breeches and hose of the same cloth, with a grey hunting-cap upon his head; the hose being pulled up to the middle of his leg, which actually seemed of
white

white alabaster. Having washed his delicate feet, he wiped them with a handkerchief, which he took out of his cap, and in so doing, lifted up his head, shewing to the bye-standers, a face of such exquisite beauty, that Cardenio said in a whisper to the curate, "Since that is not Lucinda, it can be no earthly, but some celestial being!" The youth taking off his cap, and shaking his head, a large quantity of hair, that Apollo himself might envy, flowed down upon his shoulders, and discovered to the spectators, that the supposed peasant was no other than a woman, the most delicate and handsome that the curate and barber had ever beheld; or even Cardenio, had he not seen and been acquainted with Lucinda, who, alone, as he afterwards owned, could contend with her in beauty. Her golden locks fell down in such length and quantity, as not only covered her shoulders, but also concealed every other part of her body except her feet: and, instead, of a comb, she made use of her hands, which, if her feet looked like crystal in the brook, appeared among her hair like moulds of drifted snow. All these circumstances increasing the desire of the bye-standers to know who she was, they resolved to shew themselves, and at the stir they made in advancing, the beauteous phantom raised her head, and parting her locks with both hands, to see what occasioned the noise she heard, no sooner perceived them than she started up, and without staying to put on her shoes, or tie up her hair, seized a bundle that lay by her, and betook herself to flight, full of consternation and surprise: but she had not run six yards, when her delicate feet, unable to bear the roughness of the stones, failed under her, and she fell to the ground. This accident being perceived by the other three, they ran to her assistance, and the curate approaching her first, "Stay, madam, said he, whosoever you are; those whom you see have no other design than that of

doing you service : therefore, there is no necessity for your attempting such a precipitate flight, which neither your own feet nor our inclination will allow." To this address she made no reply, being quite astonished and confused ; but the priest taking her by the hand, proceeded in this manner : " Madam, though your dress concealed, your hair hath discovered manifest signs, that it must be no slight cause which hath shrouded your beauty in such unworthy disguise, and brought you to this solitude, where it is our fortune to find you ; and to offer, if not a certain remedy for your misfortune, at least our best advice : for no grievance can harass or drive the afflicted to such extremity, while life remains, as to make them shut their ears against that counsel which is given with the most humane and benevolent intention. Wherefore, madam, or sir, or what you please to be, recollect yourself from the confusion in which the sight of us hath thrown you, and tell us the particulars of your good or evil fortune, in full assurance of finding us altogether, or each by himself, disposed to sympathize with your affliction."

While the curate pronounced these words, the disguised damsel stood wrapt in attention, gazing at them all around, without moving her lips, or uttering one syllable, like a country villager gaping at rarities which he had never seen before : but the priest enforcing what he had said, with other arguments to the same effect, she heaved a profound sigh, and broke silence, saying, " Since these solitary mountains have not been able to conceal me, and my loose dishevelled hair allows me not to disguise the truth, it would be in vain for me to feign such things as your reason could not believe, though your courtesy might excuse them. On that supposition, I thank you, gentlemen, for your humane offer, which lays me under the obligation of giving you all the satisfaction you desire ; though

though I am afraid, that the relation I shall make of my misfortunes, will, instead of compassion, excite your disgust; for you will find it impossible either to cure my woes, or teach me to bear them with fortitude; but nevertheless, that my reputation may not suffer in your opinion, as you have discovered me to be a woman, and a young one, alone, and in this disguise; circumstances, which considered either together or apart, might prejudice my good name in this world; I will freely disclose to you those things, which, if possible, I would have willingly concealed."

All this preamble was uttered in a breath by the beautiful apparition, with such volubility of tongue, and sweetness of voice, that they admired her good sense as much as her beauty; and repeating their profers of service, as well as their intreaties, that she would perform her promise; she without further importunity, put on her shoes with great modesty, adjusted her hair, and sat down in the midst of her three hearers, upon a seat in the rock, where, after having endeavoured to repress a few tears that started in her eyes, she, with a clear and deliberate voice, began the story of her life, in this manner:

"In this province of Andalusia, there is a place, from whence a certain duke, one of those who are called grandees of Spain, derives his title: he hath two sons, the eldest of whom is heir to his estate, and, in all appearance, to his good qualities; but the younger inherits nothing that I know, but the treachery of Vellido and falsehood of Galalon. To this nobleman my parents are vassals; and though low in pedigree, so considerable in wealth, that if their descent was equal to their fortune, they would have had nothing more to desire, nor I the mortification of seeing myself in this distress: for, I believe my misfortunes proceed from their defect in point of birth, which, though not so mean as to make them ashamed of

of their origin, is not splendid enough to overthrow my conjecture about the source of my affliction: in short, they are farmers, of a plain honest family, without the least intermixture of Moorish blood, but, as the saying is, old, rusty christians; ay, and so rusty, that by their riches and opulent way of living, they are gradually acquiring the title of gentlefolks, nay of quality too; though what they prized above all riches and title was their happiness in having me for their daughter; and therefore, as they had no other child to inherit their estate, and were naturally the most affectionate of parents, I was beloved and indulged by them with the utmost degree of parental fondness. I was the mirror in which they beheld themselves, the staff of their age, and shared with heaven their whole attention and desires, with which, as they were pure and unblemished, my own perfectly corresponded; and therefore I was mistress of their affection as well as their wealth. By my advice, they received and dismissed their servants: the tale and account of what was both sowed and reaped passed through my hands. I managed the oil-mills, the vineyards, the herds and the flocks, the bee-hives, and every thing that such a rich farmer as my father may be supposed to possess: in short, I was steward and mistress, and acted with such care and œconomy, that I should not find it easy to exaggerate the pleasure and satisfaction which my parents enjoyed. Those parts of the day that remained, after I had given all due attention to the herdsmen, overseers, and other day-labourers, I employed in exercises equally decent and necessary for young women, such as lace-making, needle-work, and spinning: and, if at any time, I interrupted these employments, in order to recreate the mind, I entertained myself with some religious book, or diversified my amusement with the harp; being convinced by experience, that music lulls
the

the disordered thoughts, and elevates the dejected spirits. Such was the life I led in my father's house: and, if I have described it too minutely, it is not through ostentation, in order to display our riches, but with a view of manifesting how innocently I forfeited that happy situation, and incurred the misery of my present state. While I passed my time in these occupations, my retirement was such as almost equalled that of a nunnery, being seen by nobody, as I thought, but the servants of the family; for, I went to mass early in the morning accompanied by my mother and the maids; and veiled with such reserve, that my eyes scarce beheld the ground on which I trod: yet, nevertheless, I was perceived by those of love, or rather libertinism, which even exceeds the lynx in penetration, and then possessed the faculties of Don Fernando, younger son of the duke whom I have already mentioned."

She no sooner mentioned the name of Don Fernando, then Cardenio changed colour, and began to sweat with such agitation, that the curate and barber perceiving it, were afraid he would be seized with one of those fits of distraction which, as they had heard, assaulted him from time to time: but, after some drops of sweat had burst out upon his skin, he remained quiet, and looking earnestly at the farmer's fair daughter, immediately guessed who she was; while she, without observing the emotions of Cardenio, went on with her story, in these words: "And he no sooner beheld me, than, as he afterwards protested, he deeply felt the power of love, which indeed his behaviour clearly evinced: but, to shorten the account of my misfortune, which is lengthened beyond all comfort, I will pass over in silence the industrious schemes that Don Fernando planned, for opportunities of declaring his passion: he bribed every servant in the family, and even made presents and proffers

proffers of service to my relations : there was nothing but gaiety and rejoicing all day long in our street : and all night, it was impossible to sleep for serenades. The letters which, through an unknown channel, came to my hand, were without number, filled with the most amorous flights and professions, and vows and promises in every line : but all these efforts, far from soothing, hardened me against him, as much as if he had been my mortal foe ; and all the stratagems he practised, in order to subdue my coyness, had a quite contrary effect : not that I was disgusted at the gallantry of Don Fernando, or enraged at his importunities ; for I felt a certain kind of pleasure, in being courted and beloved by such a noble cavalier : neither did I take umbrage at seeing myself praised in his letters ; for it is my opinion that all women, let them be never so homely, are pleased to hear themselves celebrated for beauty ; but, to all these artifices, I opposed my own virtue, together with the repeated advices of my parents, who plainly perceived the passion of Don Fernando ; because he himself took no care to conceal it from the world. They assured me, that in my virtue and prudence alone they confided and deposited their own honour and reputation : they bade me consider the inequality between Don Fernando and me, which was a convincing proof that his love, though he himself asserted the contrary, tended more to his own gratification than my advantage ; and said, if I could throw any obstruction in his way, to make him quit his unjust pretensions, I should be married immediately, according to my own choice, either to one of the principal persons of our own town, or to some gentleman in the neighbourhood, as I had abundance of lovers, attracted by their wealth, and my reputation. With these assurances, the truth of which I could not doubt, I fortified my integrity, and would never send any reply to Don Fernando,

that

that could, in the most distant manner, flatter him with the hope of accomplishing his wish: but all my reserve, which he ought to have looked upon as the effect of disdain, served only to whet his libidinous appetite, which is the true name of the passion he professed; for had it been genuine love, you would not now be listening to my story, which I should have had no occasion to recount.

In fine, Don Fernando got notice that my parents intended to bestow me in marriage, that they might deprive him of all hope of possessing me, or, at least, provide me with more guards to protect my virtue; and this piece of news alarmed him so much, that he put in practice an expedient to retard the dreaded match. One night, while I sat in my apartment, attended by my maid only, the doors being all fast locked, that through negligence my virtue might not be in danger, without knowing or comprehending the means of his conveyance, he appeared before me, in the midst of this reserve, precaution, solitude, silence, and retreat! At sight of him, I was so much confounded, that the light forsook my eyes, and my tongue denied its office; so that being deprived of the power of utterance, I could not cry for help, neither, I believe, would he have suffered me to exclaim; for he instantly seized me in his arms, my confusion being such, that I had not strength to defend myself, and began to pour forth such protestations, that I cannot conceive how falsehood is able to ape truth so exactly. The traitor's tears gave credit to his words, and his sighs confirmed the honesty of his intention. I being a poor young creature, by myself, altogether unexperienced in those affairs, began, I know not how, to believe his false professions; but, not so as to be moved to weak compassion, either by his vows or artful sorrow; on the contrary, my first surprise being over, I recollected my dissipated spirits, and

and with more courage than I thought myself possessed of, said to him, Signor, if instead of being within your arms, as I now am, I was in the paws of a fierce lion, and my deliverance entirely depended upon my doing or saying any thing prejudicial to my virtue, it would be as impossible for me to comply with these terms, as it is impossible for that which is, to lose its existence : wherefore, though you keep my body confined within your arms, I am in full possession of my soul, with all her chaste desires, which are entirely opposite to yours, as you will plainly perceive, if you resolve to proceed in gratifying your wishes by force. I am your vassal, but not your slave : the nobility of your blood neither has, nor ought to have, the power of dishonouring or despising the lowliness of mine ; and my character is as precious to me, though I am but a plebeian farmer's daughter, as yours can be to you, who are a nobleman and cavalier. All your strength shall not effect your purpose ; neither am I to be influenced by your riches, deceived by your words, or melted by your sighs and tears. Any of these expressions in a man, to whom my parents should give me in marriage, would gain my consent and reciprocal inclination ; nay, if my honour were safe, I could sacrifice my satisfaction, and voluntarily yield what you, signor, now attempt to obtain by force : this I observe, that you may rest assured that I will never grant any favour to him who is not my lawful spouse."

" If that be your sole objection, charming Dorothea (for that is the name of this wretched creature) said the perfidious cavalier, behold I here present my hand, in pledge of being yours for ever ; and may Heaven, from which nothing is concealed, together with that image of the Blessed Virgin, bear witness to the sincerity and truth of this declaration." Cardenio, when she called herself Dorothea, was surprized

anew

anew, and confirmed in his first conjecture; but, unwilling to interrupt the story in which he expected to hear the issue of what he already knew, he only said, "Is your name Dorothea, madam? I have heard of one of that name, to whose misfortunes yours bear a great resemblance; but pray proceed; the time will come when I shall tell you such things as will equally excite your terror and affliction." "Dorothea surprised at the discourse of Cardenio, as well as at his strange and ragged attire, entreated him if he knew any thing of her affairs to communicate it immediately; saying, that if fortune had left her any thing of value, it was the courage to endure any disaster that might befall her; though she was almost certain, that what she had already suffered could admit of no addition."

"Madam, replied Cardenio, I would not be the means of impairing that fortitude, by telling you what I know, if my conjecture be right; neither is there any opportunity lost, nor is it of any consequence to you, whether you hear it or not." "Be that as it will, answered Dorothea, I will go on with the sequel of my story. Don Fernando addressing himself to the image he found in my apartment, invoked the Blessed Virgin to bear witness to our nuptials, and avowed himself my husband with the most binding and solemn oaths; though, before he proceeded so far, I desired him to reflect upon what he was going to do, and consider how much his father might be incensed at his conduct, when he should find him married to the daughter of his own farmer and vassal. I cautioned him against being blinded by my beauty, such as it was, telling him it would be far from being a sufficient excuse for his error; and begged, if he had any love and regard for me, he would manifest it, in leaving me to a fate more adequate to my rank and circumstances; observing, that such unequal matches

were seldom blessed with a long duration of those raptures with which they begin.

All these reflections I repeated to him, with many more which I do not remember; but they had no effect in diverting him from the prosecution of his purpose; for he was like a man who, in making a bargain, never boggles at the price of the commodity, because he never intends to pay it. At the same time, I held a short conference with my own breast, saying within myself, "Neither shall I be the first, who, by marriage, has risen from a low station to rank and grandeur; nor will Don Fernando be the first nobleman whom beauty, or rather blind affection, hath induced to share his greatness with a partner of unequal birth. Since therefore, I neither make a new world nor a new custom, it is but reasonable in me to embrace this honour that fortune throws in my way; and although the affection he professes should not survive the accomplishment of his wish, I shall nevertheless, in the sight of God, remain his true and lawful wife. Besides, should I treat him with disdain, I see he is determined to transgress the bounds of duty, and avail himself of force; in which case, I shall be dishonoured and inexcusable in the opinion of those who do not know how innocently I have incurred their censure; for where shall I find arguments to persuade my parents, that this cavalier entered my apartment, without my knowledge and consent?"

All these reflections, which my imagination revolved in an instant, began to sway me towards that which (though I little thought so) proved my ruin; especially when aided and enforced by the oaths of Don Fernando, the powers he called to witness, the tears he shed, and, in short, by his genteel carriage and agreeable disposition, accompanied by such marks of real passion, as might have melted any other heart as soft and unexperienced as mine. I called my maid

to be a joint evidence with the powers of Heaven : Don Fernando repeated and confirmed his oaths ; took other saints to witness his integrity ; imprecated a thousand curses on his head, in case he should fail to fulfil his promise ; had recourse to sighs and tears again, straining me still closer in his arms, from which he had never released me. By these means, and the departure of my maid, I forfeited that name, and he became a false and finished traitor.

The morning that succeeded this night of my misfortune, did not arrive so soon, I believe, as Don Fernando could have wished ; for when once a man hath satisfied his rage of appetite, his chief inclination is to quit the scene of his success. This I observe, because Don Fernando seemed impatient to be gone ; and, by the industry of my maid, who had conducted him to my chamber, found himself in the street before day : when he took his leave, he told me, though not with such violence of rapture as he expressed on his first coming, that I might depend upon his honour, and the sincerity of the oaths he had sworn, as a further confirmation of which, he took a ring of value from his finger, and put it upon mine : in short, he vanished, leaving me in a situation which I can neither call joyful nor sad. This I know, that I remained in a state of confusion and perplexity, and, as it were, beside myself, on account of what had happened ; but I either wanted courage or memory to quarrel with my maid for the perfidy she had been guilty of, in conducting Don Fernando to my apartment : indeed, I could not as yet determine, whether the adventure would redound to my advantage or misfortune. I told him at parting, that now I was his wife, he might see me any night, by the same means he had used to procure this first interview, until he should think proper to make our marriage public : but, excepting the following night, I could never set eyes on

him either in the street or at church, during a whole month, which I spent in the utmost anxiety of expectation, although I knew he was in town, and almost every day employed in the chace, an exercise to which he was greatly addicted. Those were doleful and distracting hours and days to me; for then I began to doubt, and afterwards to disbelieve the faith of Don Fernando: then was my maid exposed to those rebukes for her presumption, which she had never heard before: then was I obliged to husband my tears, and wear composure on my countenance, that I might not give occasion to my parents to ask the cause of my discontent; and be put to the trouble of inventing falsehoods to deceive them. But all this constraint was banished by an event, the knowledge of which trod down all other respects, put an end to all my prudent measures, and by destroying my patience, published my misfortune to the world. This was no other than a report that soon after prevailed in our town, by which I learned that Don Fernando was married, in a neighbouring city, to a young lady of exceeding beauty, and distinguished birth, though her parents could not give her a portion suitable to such a noble alliance. I understood her name was Lucinda, and that several surprising accidents had happened at their nuptials."

Cardenio hearing Lucinda's name, though he said nothing, shrugged up his shoulders, bit his lips, contracted the skin of his forehead, and discharged from his eyes two fountains of tears: but, notwithstanding, Dorothea continued her story, saying, "This melancholy piece of news no sooner reached my ears, than, instead of freezing, it inflamed my heart with such rage and fury, that I had well nigh run out into the streets, and published aloud the falsehood and treachery he had practised upon me: but my rage was restrained for that time, by a plan which I conceived,

and

and actually put in execution that very night. I dressed myself in this garb, which I received from one of the swains belonging to the house, to whom I disclosed my whole misfortune, intreating him to attend me to the city, where I understood my adversary was. After having disapproved of the attempt, and blamed my resolution, seeing me determined, he offered to keep me company, as he said, to the world's end; that moment I packed up my woman's dress in a pillow-case, together with some jewels and money, as a resource in time of need; and in the dead of that very night, without giving the least hint to my perfidious maid, left my father's house, and accompanied by my servant, and a thousand strange imaginations, set out for that city on foot, winged with the desire of finding Don Fernando; and resolved, though I could not prevent what was already done, to demand with what conscience he had done it.

In two days and an half I arrived at the city, and enquiring for the house of Lucinda's parents, the first person to whom I put the question, told me more than I desired to hear. He directed me to the house, and related every incident which had happened at his daughter's wedding; a story so public, that it was become the common town-talk. He said, that on the night of their nuptials, after she had pronounced the Yes, by which he became her husband, Lucinda was seized with a violent fit; that Don Fernando opening her breast to give her fresh air, found in it a paper written with her own hand, importing, that she could not lawfully espouse Don Fernando, being already the wife of Cardenio, who, as the man told me, was one of the principal cavaliers of that town; and that she had now pronounced the fatal Yes, merely because she would not swerve from the obedience she owed to her parents; in short, he said the contents of the paper plainly gave them to understand, that she intended to

make away with herself, immediately after the ceremony, induced by the reasons which were there contained ; and this resolution was confirmed by a poignard which they found concealed in some part of her dress. Don Fernando perceiving by what happened, that Lucinda had baffled, scorned, and undervalued his addresses, ran to her before she had recovered the use of her senses, and with the poignard they had found, would have stabbed her to the heart, had he not been prevented by her parents and the rest of the company. It was, moreover, reported that Don Fernando immediately retired : and that Lucinda continued in a fit till next day. When she recovered from her swoon, she declared to her father and mother, that she was the true and lawful wife of that same Cardenio, who, it seems, was present at the ceremony ; and who, when he saw her actually married, contrary to his former belief and firm expectation, quitted the city in despair, having first left a writing, that declared the wrong she had done him, and signified his intention to banish himself for ever from the society of mankind. All this transaction was so notorious and public in the city, as to furnish discourse for every body ; and the subject was not diminished when it was known, that Lucinda was not to be found either in her father's house, or any other part of the town, which was searched all over by her parents, who had almost run distracted, not knowing what other method they should take to retrieve her. This information revived my hopes a little ; for I was better pleased to have missed Don Fernando, than to have found him married to another ; thinking, that every gate of comfort was not yet shut against me ; and that Heaven, perhaps, had thrown that impediment in the way of his second marriage, with a view of making him reflect upon what he owed to the first ; and reminding him of his being a christian, consequently more interested

in the care of his soul, than in any other human concern. All these things I revolved in my imagination ; and as I had no real comfort, consoled myself with the most feeble and distant hope, in order to support a life which I now abhor.

While I remained in this city, undetermined what course to take, as I could not find Don Fernando, I heard a public cryer describe my person and dress, and offer a considerable reward to any one that should discover where I was. Nay, it was said, that I had seduced from my father's house, the young man who attended me ; a circumstance that touched me to the very soul : finding my credit fallen so low, that they were not satisfied with publishing my escape, but must needs also mention my attendant, a creature so mean and unworthy of my attention and regard ; as soon as I heard myself proclaimed, I quitted the town, accompanied by my servant, who already began to give marks of flagging in his promised faith and fidelity ; and that night reached the most woody part of this mountain, urged by the fear of being discovered : but, as it is commonly observed, one mischance invites another, and the end of one misfortune is often the beginning of a worse ; this was literally my case : my trusty servant who had hitherto behaved with such zeal and fidelity, seeing me in this solitary place, and instigated by his own villany, rather than any beauty of mine, attempted to avail himself of the opportunity which he thought this desert offered ; and with great impudence, contempt of Heaven, and disregard to me, began to talk of love ; when, finding that I rejected his immodest proposals with just indignation and disdain, he laid aside intreaties for the use of those who might please to use them, and began to employ force for the accomplishment of his will : but, just Heaven, who seldom or never abandons the righteous intention, favoured and assisted mine so effectually, that with the
little

little strength I have, and no great trouble, I pushed him over a precipice, unknowing whether or not he survived the fall: then as nimbly as my weariness and terror would allow, I penetrated farther into the mountain, without any other thought or intention, than that of keeping myself concealed from my father, and those whom he had employed to find me out.

I know not how many months I have lived in this place, where I met with a grazier, who took me into his service, and carried me to his house, which stands in the very heart of the mountain. Him I have served all this time, in quality of a cow-herd, endeavouring to be always in the field, that I might the more easily conceal that hair which hath now so unexpectedly discovered my sex: yet all my care and industry were vain; for my master having found me out to be a woman, was seized with the same desire that took possession of my own servant. But fortune with the evil does not always send the remedy; for, I could neither find rock nor bog, by which I might have disabled my master, as I had before punished my man: and therefore, as the least inconvenience, I have left his house, and chosen to hide myself again among these thickets, rather than try my strength against him, in defence of my innocence. I say, I returned to these woods, in hopes of finding a place in which I might, without impediment, implore Heaven with sighs and tears, to have compassion upon my misery, and give me industry and grace to overcome it, or quit my being in this solitude, without leaving behind me the least trace or remembrance of this forlorn wretch, who, without any fault of her own, hath afforded so much matter for conversation and censure both at home and abroad.

CHAP. II.

Of the beautiful Dorothea's discretion ; with other pleasant and entertaining particulars.

THIS, gentlemen, is the genuine detail of my tragic story : consider, therefore, and judge whether or not I have sufficient cause to heave more sighs than I have vented, utter more complaints than you have heard, and shed more tears than have flowed from mine eyes ; and when you shall have deliberated upon the quality of my misfortune, you will perceive how vain all consolation must be ; as the disease admits of no remedy. I only ask what you easily can, and ought to grant, namely, that you would inform me where I can pass my life, without being harassed by the surprise and fear of being found by those who are in search of me. For, though I am well assured that my parents, out of their great love and affection, would receive me again into their favour, such is the shame and confusion I feel at the bare thought of their having altered their opinion to my prejudice, that I would rather conceal myself from their sight for ever, than appear in their presence, under the suspicion of having acted contrary to the expectations they entertained from my virtue." So saying, she left off speaking, and her face was overspread with a blush that plainly denoted the sentiments and confusion of her soul. Those who had heard her story, were equally surprised and afflicted at her misfortune ; to which the curate was going to offer some consolation and advice, when Cardenio took her by the hand, saying, " It seems then, madam, you are the beauteous Dorothea, only daughter of Cleonardo the rich !" She was astonished to hear her father's name pronounced by one of such a miserable appearance ; for we have already observed,

observed, how wretchedly Cardenio was clothed, and said to him, "And who are you, brother, who know so well my father's name, which, if I remember aright, I have not once mentioned in the whole course of my unfortunate story?"

"I am, replied Cardenio, that unfortunate man, to whom, as you have observed, Lucinda said she was married. I am that miserable Cardenio, whom the villany of him who reduced you to your present situation, hath brought to this deplorable condition in which you now see me, ragged, half-naked, destitute of all human comfort, and, which is still worse, deprived of my understanding, except at certain short intervals, that I enjoy by the permission of Heaven. I, Dorothea, am the person who was present at the perfidy of Don Fernando, and heard Lucinda pronounce the fatal Yes, by which she accepted him for a husband. I am he who wanted resolution to wait the issue of her swoon, or stay and see the result of that paper which was found in her bosom: for my soul could not sustain the shock of such accumulated misfortune; and therefore I quitted the house, already abandoned by my patience, and leaving a letter with my host, whom I charged to deliver into Lucinda's own hand, betook myself to these deserts, with an intention here to finish the life which from that instant I have abhorred as my most inveterate foe. But fate hath not been pleased to grant my wish, contenting itself with having deprived me of my judgment, with a view, perhaps, of reserving me for better fortune; which I begin to hope may proceed from this lucky meeting with you, since, if that which you have recounted be true, as I believe it is, there is a possibility that Heaven may have in store for us both, a more favourable termination of our disasters, than we imagine; for, supposing that Lucinda, who is already my wife, as she hath openly declared, cannot be married





to Do
ready
that I
longs
retrie
sprun
ed on
dered
rity o
lution
your
upon
will r
Don
gume
you,
tlema
factic
my o
of H
earth
T
of D
his k
his f
no m
prove
lar m
acco
der
and
Fern
rents
most
thea
imme
fient

to Don Fernando, nor he lawfully wed her, being already espoused to you, I think we have room to hope, that Heaven will one day restore what mutually belongs to us ; as it is neither alienated, ruined, nor irretrievable. And since this consolation still remains, sprung from hopes that are not very remote, and founded on expectations which are not the effects of a disordered imagination, I entreat you, madam, in the purity of your sentiments, to change your present resolution, as I intend to alter mine, and accommodate yourself to the hopes of better fortune ; for I swear upon the faith of a gentleman and a christian, that I will never abandon you, until I see you in the arms of Don Fernando, whom, if I cannot, by reasonable arguments, bring to a true sense of his duty towards you, I will then use that privilege to which every gentleman is intitled, and, in single combat, demand satisfaction for the injury he has done you, without minding my own wrongs, which I will leave to the vengeance of Heaven, that may the sooner revenge yours upon earth."

This speech of Cardenio put an end to the surprize of Dorothea, who being at a loss how to thank him for his kind and generous offer, stooped in order to kiss his feet ; but this piece of condescension he would by no means allow. The priest answering for both, approved of Cardenio's declaration ; and, in a particular manner, intreated, advised, and persuaded them to accompany him to the village where he lived, in order to provide themselves with what they wanted ; and there consult some scheme either for finding Don Fernando, or for carrying Dorothea back to her parents, or, in short, for doing that which should seem most necessary and convenient. Cardenio and Dorothea thanked him for his courteous offer, which they immediately embraced ; and the barber, who had been silent and attentive all this time, having joined the curate

rate in his compliments and hearty proffers of service, briefly recounted the cause which had brought them thither; namely, the strange madness of Don Quixote; observing, that they were then waiting for the return of his squire, whom they had sent in quest of his master. Cardenio, immediately, as if it had been the faint impression of a dream, recollected and related the quarrel which had happened between the knight and him, though he could not remember the cause of the dispute.

At that instant they heard and recognized the voice of Sancho, who not finding them in the place where he had left them, hollowed aloud; upon which they went to meet him, and enquiring about Don Quixote, were told by the squire, that he found him naked to the shirt, wan, meagre, half famished, and sighing for his mistress Dulcinea; that when he (Sancho) told him she had commanded him to quit that place, and go immediately to Toboso, where she waited with impatience to see him, he had answered, that he was determined never to appear before her, until he should have performed such achievements as would render him worthy of her favour; and Sancho observed, that if this resolution should hold, it was possible he might never attain to the rank of an emperor, as he was in duty bound, nor even to that of an archbishop, which was the least he could expect. He desired them, therefore, to consider some means of disengaging the knight from his solitude. The priest bade him be under no concern, for they would fall upon a method to remove his master whether he would or no.

Then he explained to Cardenio and Dorothea, the plan they had laid to cure Don Quixote of his madness, or, at least, bring him back to his own house. This Dorothea no sooner understood, than she told him, that she was more proper than the barber for acting the part of the distressed damsel; especially, as she

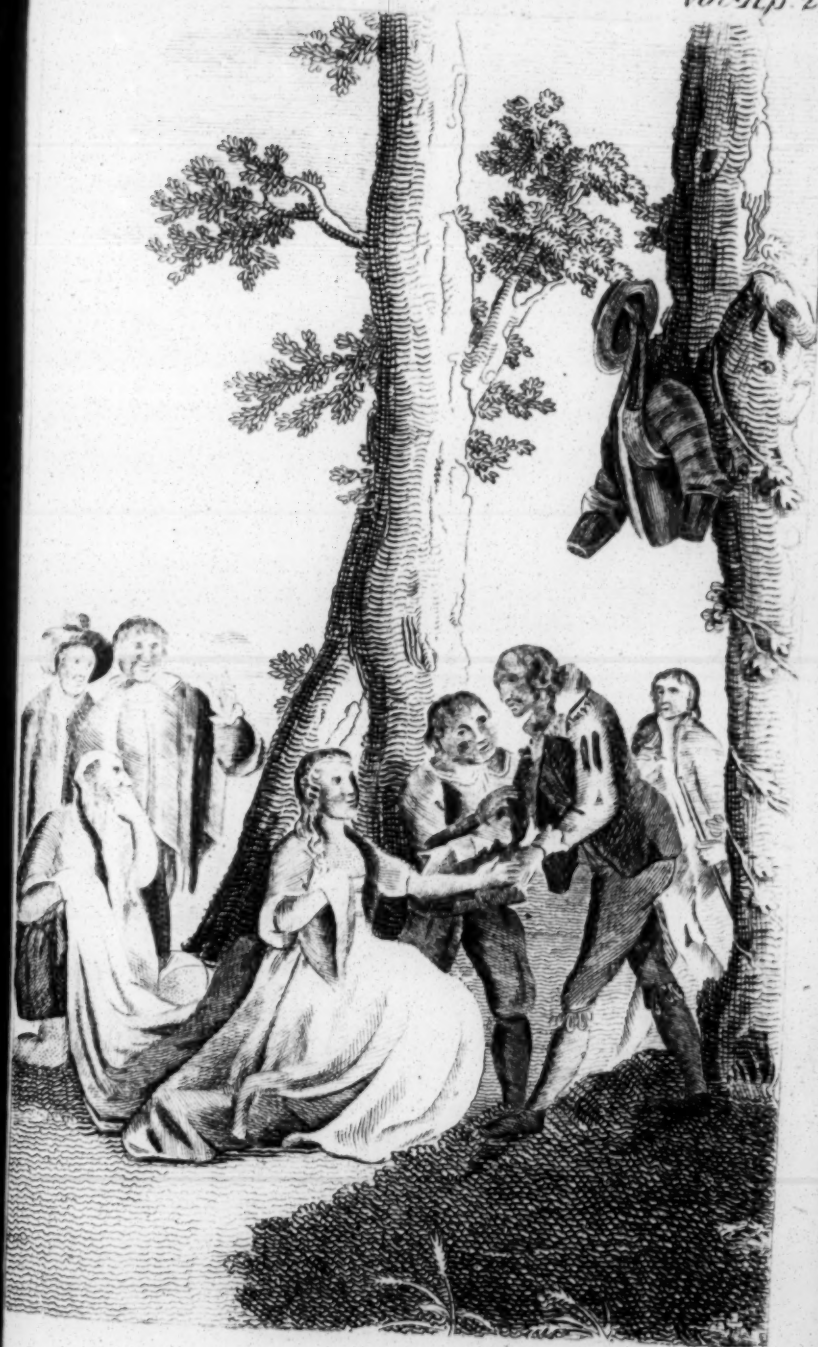
she ha
purpo
every
toward
a great
well a
fels w
that b
execut
ven see
ing a c
misfor
cilitat
her p
stuff, w
little c
with v
tage, t
and fo
she ha
what
with m
sent w
ment,
Don F
ment, t
admira
rest: f
that in
beautif
with g
and wh
Sancho
say no
of the l
as a bo
* A
VOL.

she had cloaths along with her, that would answer the purpose ; and bade them trust to her, for representing every part of the character, which should be necessary towards the success of their design ; for, she had read a great many books of chivalry, and was perfectly well acquainted with the style in which afflicted damsels were wont to beg boons of knights-errant. “ If that be the case, said the curate, let us not delay the execution of our scheme : for, without doubt, Heaven seems to favour my endeavours ; not only, in opening a door, so unexpectedly, towards the cure of your misfortunes, but also in making you subservient in facilitating our success. Dorothea then pulled out of her pillow-case a gown and petticoat, of very rich stuff, with a beautiful green mantlet, and opening a little casket, took out a rich necklace and other jewels, with which she instantly dressed herself to such advantage, that she appeared like a lady of the first rank and fortune. All these and other ornaments, she said, she had carried off from her father’s house, in case of what might happen ; though hitherto, she had met with no opportunity of using them. Every one present was charmed with her graceful mein, easy deportment, and exceeding beauty ; and passed sentence on Don Fernando, as a person of little taste and discernment, for having abandoned such excellence. But the admiration of Sancho was superior to that of all the rest : for he actually thought, and indeed it was true, that in all the days of his life he had never seen such a beautiful creature ; and accordingly asked the curate, with great eagerness, who that handsome lady was, and what she looked for in these by-places ? “ Friend Sancho, answered the curate, that handsome lady, to say no more of her, is heiress, in the direct male line of the kingdom of * Micomicon, come hither to beg, as a boon of your master, that he would redress a

* As if he had aid Ape land, Mico signifying an ape.

wrong and grievance done to her by a discourteous giant: for such is the fame and reputation of that excellent knight Don Quixote, through the whole extent of Guinea, as to induce this princess to come from thence in quest of him." "Blessed quest! cried Sancho, and happy finding, say I, especially if my master should be so fortunate as to right the wrong, and redress the grievance, by killing that son of a whore of a giant that your worship mentions: and kill him he certainly will, if they should once meet, provided he be not a phantom; for you must know my master has no power over phantoms. But one thing among many others, I must beg of you, Mr Licentiate, and that is, to put my master out of conceit of an archbishopric, for I am afraid his inclination leans that way, and advise him to marry this princess out of hand, a match which will make it impossible for him to receive holy orders; and therefore he will the more easily arrive at the seat of empire, and I at the end of my wish. For I have carefully considered the affair, and by my reckoning, I shall not find my account in his being an archbishop, as I am altogether unfit for the church, by the reason of my being married; and for me, who have a wife and children, to be petitioning for dispensations to hold livings, would be an endless talk. Wherefore, signor, the point is this: let my master immediately take to wife the same lady, whose name I do not know; for, indeed, I never saw her grace before this blessed minute." "She is called the princess Micomicona," replied the curate, because, her kingdom being Micomicon, it is plain her name must be Micomicona." "Yes, to be sure, said Sancho, I have known several people take a surname and addition from the place of their nativity, calling themselves, for example, Pedro d'Alcala, Juna de Ubeda, Diego de Valladolid; and I suppose they have the same custom in Guinea, where the queens take their names from the kingdoms they







th
an
t
ch
at
ch
wh
ed

rat
tha
gu
cau
ate
bec
fess
cur
the
men
the
app
by
atte
defi
cou
with
the
F
they
still
rock
he, i
whip
bear
knig
his la
agill

they rule." The priest confirmed Sancho's opinion, and promised to use his utmost influence to promote the marriage of the knight. With this assurance Sancho rested as much satisfied as the other was surprised at his simplicity, when he perceived how carefully he cherished, in his imagination, the same extravagant whims that possessed his master, who, he firmly believed, would one day become an emperor.

By this time, Dorothea being mounted on the curate's mule, and the barber's face accommodated with the ox's tail, by way of beard, they desired Sancho to guide them to the place where Don Quixote was, and cautioned him against pretending to know the licentiate and his companion, assuring him that his master's becoming an emperor entirely depended upon his professing ignorance of their persons. Yet neither the curate nor Cardenio would accompany them; because the presence of this last might recal to the knight's memory, the quarrel which had happened between them; and it was not yet proper that the priest should appear: for which reasons, they let the rest proceed by themselves, and they followed at a small distance, after the curate had given her cue to Dorothea, who desired him to make himself perfectly easy on her account; for she would act the part assigned to her, without having the least occasion for a prompter, in the true style and spirit of knight-errantry.

Having travelled about three quarters of a league, they discovered Don Quixote already clothed, though still unarmed, sitting in the midst of a labyrinth of rocks: and Dorothea no sooner understood it was he, in consequence of Sancho's information, than she, whipt up her palfrey, close attended by the well-bearded barber, who, when she approached the knight, threw himself from his mule, and ran to help his lady to alight. But she, dismounting with great agility, went and fell upon her knees before Don Quix-

ete, whom, in spite of his repeated endeavours to raise her, she accosted in these words :

"Never will I rise from this posture, most valiant and invincible knight, until your benevolence and courtesy grant me a boon, which will not only redound to the honour and applause of your own person, but also to the advantage of the most injured and disconsolate damsel that ever the sun beheld ; and if the valour of your mighty arm corresponds with the voice of your immortal fame, you are obliged to favour the unfortunate, who, attracted by the odour of your celebrated name, come from far distant regions in quest of your assistance." "Beauteous lady, replied Don Quixote, I will not answer one word, nor hear one circumstance of your affairs, until you rise from the ground." "I will not rise, signor, answered the afflicted damsel, until I shall have obtained from your condescension the boon I beg." "I condescend and grant it, resumed the knight, provided, in so doing, I act neither to the detriment nor derogation of my king, my country, and her who holds my heart and liberty enslaved *." "Your compliance, worthy signor, replied the mourning lady, shall in no ways affect the exceptions you have made."

At that instant Sancho came up, and whispered

* When a knight had once granted a boon in this manner, it was impossible for him to retract, let the request be never so extravagant. We are told by Joinville, that the queen of St Lewis being big with child, and in the utmost terror of falling alive into the hands of the infidels at Damietta in Egypt, fell upon her knees before an old knight turned of fourscore, and conjured him to grant her boon : The old man having promised to comply, on the faith of his knighthood, she told him the favour she so pressingly solicited, was, that he would cut off her head, before she should fall into the hands of the enemy : provided the Saracens should become masters of the town. The senior answered without hesitation, that she might depend upon his word ; and owned he had taken that resolution even before she signified her request.

softly

softly in his master's ear: "Your worship may safely grant the boon she asks, which is a mere trifle; no more than slaying a gigantic sort of a fellow; and she who begs it, is the high and mighty princess Micomicona, queen of the great empire of Micomicon in Ethiopia." "Whosoever she is, answered Don Quixote, I will do what I am in duty bound to perform, and act according to the dictates of my own conscience, and conformable to the order I profess." Then turning to Dorothea, "Rise, most beautiful lady, said he, the boon you ask is granted." "Then what I ask is this, resumed the damsel, that your magnanimity would immediately accompany me to the place from whence I came, and promise to attempt no other adventure, nor grant any other request, until you shall have taken vengeance on a traitor who hath usurped my crown, contrary to all right human and divine." "I grant your request, madam, answered Don Quixote; henceforth you may dispel that melancholy with which you are depressed, and let your fainting hope resume new strength and vigour; for, with the assistance of God, and this my arm, you shall, in a short time, see yourself restored to your kingdom, and seated on the throne of your royal ancestors, in defiance and despite of all those evil-designing persons who mean to oppose you; let us set hands to the work then, for, according to the common observation, Delay breeds danger."

The distressed damsel struggled with great perseverance to kiss his hand; but Don Quixote, who was in all respect a well-bred knight, would by no means allow such humiliation: on the contrary, raising her up, he embraced her with great politeness and cordiality, ordering Sancho to secure Rozinante's girths, and help him to arm with all expedition. The squire taking down the armour, which hung on a tree, in the manner of a trophy, and adjusting the horse's

girths, in a twinkling equipped his master, who finding himself armed, "Now, said he, let us go, in the name of God, to the assistance of this high-born lady." The barber, who was all this time on his knees, at infinite pains to preserve his gravity and his beard, the fall of which, perhaps, would have utterly ruined their laudable design, when he found the boon was granted, and saw with what eagerness the knight undertook to fulfil it, rose up, and with the assistance of Don Quixote, helped his lady upon her mule again; then her protector bestrode Rozinante, and he himself mounted his own beast, while Sancho Panza, being left on foot, felt the loss of Dapple anew: but this he contentedly bore, believing that his master was now in the right road, and almost at the very point of being an emperor: for he assured himself, that the knight would wed that princess, and so become king of Micomicon at least: the only uneasiness he felt, was on account of that kingdom's being in the land of negroes, so that all his servants and vassals must be black; but his imagination supplied him with a remedy for this inconvenience, and he said within himself, "Suppose my vassals are negroes, what else have I to do but transport them to Spain, where I can sell them for ready money, with which I may purchase some title or post, that will maintain me at my ease all the days of my life! No, to be sure, sleep on, void of all invention or ability to dispose of your ware, and sell thirty or ten thousand slaves in the turning of a straw. Before God! I'll make them fly, little and big, or just as I may; and, blacks as they are, turn them all into whites and yellows. Let me alone to suck my own fingers." With these conceits he was so much ingrossed, and so well satisfied, that he actually forgot the pain of travelling on foot.

Cardenio and the curate saw every thing that passed from behind some bushes where they were hid, and
could

could fall upon no method of joining them conveniently, until the priest, who was an excellent schemer, thought of an expedient for the purpose: having a pair of scissars about him, he cut off the beard of Cardenio with infinite dispatch, and giving him a grey jacket, with his own black cloak, he himself remaining in his doublet and hose, the tattered cavalier was so much altered in point of appearance, that he would scarce have known himself had he looked in a glass. Although the others were jogging on, while they disguised themselves in this manner, they easily reached the highway, before the knight and his company, whose beasts were retarded by the bushes and rockyness of the ground: and taking their station just at the mouth of the entrance to the mountain, no sooner perceived the knight and his attendants come forth, than the curate looked earnestly at him a good while, as if he had been recollecting a person whom he knew, then ran to him with open arms, crying aloud, "Blessed be this meeting with the mirror of chivalry, my worthy compatriot Don Quixote de la Mancha, the flower and cream of gentility, the protector and physician of the distressed, and quintessence of knights-errant!" So saying, he embraced the left knee of Don Quixote, who, being astonished at the words and action of the man, began to consider his features with great attention, and at length recollecting him, was struck dumb with admiration, at seeing him in that place, and made many efforts to alight; which when the priest opposed, "Give me leave, Mr Licentiate, said he, it is not seemly, that I should remain on horseback, when such a reverend person as you travels on foot." "I will by no means, answered the curate, consent to your alighting; since, on horseback, your mighty arm hath atchieved the greatest exploits and adventures that this age hath seen, it shall suffice for me, who am but an unworthy priest, to get up, with permission,

mission, behind this gentleman who travels in your worship's company ; and then I shall imagine myself mounted upon Pegafus, a Zebra, or that fiery courser that carried the famous moor Muzaraque, who still lies enchanted in the vast mountain Zulema, at a little distance from the great Compluto." " I did not think of that expedient, Mr Licentiate, resumed the knight, but I know that my lady the princess will, out of regard to me, be pleased to order her squire to accommodate you with the saddle of his mule, and he himself may ride upon the crupper, if the beast will carry double." " I believe she will, said the princess ; and I am sure, there will be no occasion to lay my commands upon my squire, who is too courteous and polite to suffer an ecclesiastic to travel on foot, when it is in his power to provide him with a beast." " Your majesty is in the right," answered the barber, who instantly alighting, complimented the curate with the saddle, which was accepted without much intreaty."

But the misfortune was, when the squire attempted to get up behind, the mule, which was an hireling, consequently mischievous, lifted up her hind legs, and kicked with such fury, that had they lighted on the head or breast of Mr Nicholas, he would have had reason to curse the hour on which he set out in quest of Don Quixote : such, however, was his confusion, that he came to the ground, and his beard being neglected, fell off ; so that he could find no other method to prevent a discovery, than to clap both hands to his face with great expedition, and roar out that his teeth were demolished. Don Quixote, seeing that huge mass of beard torn from the jaw, without blood, and lying at a good distance from the squire's face, " Good heavens ! cried he ; what a wonderful phenomenon is this ! the beard is taken off and shaved as clean by the heel of the mule, as if it had been done by the hand of a barber."

barber." The curate, seeing the risk he ran of being detected in his scheme, snatched up the tail, and running with it to Mr Nicholas, who still lay bellowing for help, pulled his head to his breast with one jerk, and clapping it on again, muttered some words, which he said was an infallible charm for fixing on beards, as they should presently see; accordingly, when the affair was adjusted, he quitted the squire, who now seemed as well bearded and as sound as ever: a circumstance that, above measure, surprized the knight, who begged, that the curate, at a proper opportunity, would impart to him the charm which, he imagined, must contain more virtues than that of cementing beards; because it was plain, that where the hair was torn off, the skin and flesh must be lacerated and hurt: and if the application could heal those wounded parts; it was good for something more than mere mustachios." The curate confirmed his conjecture, and promised to disclose the secret to him with the first proper opportunity: then it was agreed, that the priest should mount the mule by himself, and with the other two ride her by turns, until they should arrive at the inn, which was about two leagues off.

Don Quixote, the princess, and the curate, being thus mounted, and Cardenio, the barber, and Sancho Panza, following on foot, the knight told the damsel, that her highness might conduct him whithersoever she pleased; but, before she could make any reply, the priest interposed, saying, "Towards what kingdom is your majesty journeying? I am much mistaken in my notions of kingdoms, if you are not bound for Micomicon?" She, who had been well instructed in her cue, concluding, that she must answer in the affirmative, said, "Yes, signor, that is the place of my destination." "Then you must pass through our village," answered the curate, and take your route to Carthagená, where your highness may happily embark;

bark ; and if you meet with no hurricane, but be favoured with a fair wind and smooth sea, in something less than nine years, you may get sight of that vast lake Meona, I mean, Meotis, which is a little more than one hundred days journey from your majesty's kingdom." " Your worship must be mistaken, said the princess, for two years are not yet elapsed, since I set out from thence ; and though the weather has always been bad, I have already obtained what I so much longed after, namely, the sight of signor Don Quixote de la Mancha, whose fame reached my ears as soon as I landed in Spain, and induced me to come in quest of him, that I might solicit his courtesy, and trust my righteous cause to the valour of his invincible arm." " Enough, madam, said Don Quixote ; spare your encomiums ; for I am an utter enemy to all sorts of adulation ; and although you are not to be suspected of flattery, my chaste ears are always offended at that kind of discourse. What I can safely affirm, is this : Whether I have valour or not, here is he, valiant or pusillanimous, who will exert himself to the last drop of his blood in the service of your highness. But this apart : pray, Mr Licentiate, what cause hath brought you hither alone, where I am really astonished to find you so ill attended, and so slightly clothed."

" In that particular you shall soon be satisfied, answered the curate : your worship must know that I and our friend Mr Nicholas the barber, set out for Sevil, to recover a sum of money, which was sent to me by a relation of mine, that went to the Indies a good many years ago : no less than sixty thousand pieces of eight in good silver, which make no inconsiderable sum : and yesterday, passing through this place, we were set upon by four highwaymen, who stripped us even to our very whiskers, and that in such a manner as obliged the barber to wear artificial ones ;

and

and you may see, pointing to Cardenio, how they have despoiled the face of this young man who accompanied us; and the cream of the story is, that, according to the public report which prevails in this neighbourhood, those who robbed us were galley-slaves, that, almost in this very place, were set at liberty by a man so valiant, as to let them all loose in spite of the commissary and his guards. Without all doubt he must have been deprived of his senses, or as great a villain as any of those he freed, or some person void of all conscience and feeling, who could thus turn loose the wolf among the lambs, the fox among the poultry, and the flies among the honey pots; defrauding justice, and rebelling against his king and rightful sovereign, by acting contrary to his just commands, in depriving the galleys of their hands, and putting in confusion the holy brotherhood, which have continued so many years in undisturbed repose: in short, he hath done a deed that may tend to the perdition of his own soul as well as body."

Sancho had before recounted to them the adventure of the galley slaves, which he had atchieved with so much glory; and therefore the curate urged it home, in order to observe the behaviour of Don Quixote, who changed colour at every word, without daring to own himself the deliverer of that worthy crew. "Those, added the priest, were the persons who rescued us; and God of his infinite mercy forgive the man who prevented the punishment they so richly deserved!"

CHAP. III.

The pleasant artifice practised to extricate our enamoured knight from the most rigorous penance he had imposed upon himself.

SCARCE had the curate pronounced this apostrophe, when Sancho blundered out, "Then, in good faith, Mr Licentiate, he who performed this exploit was no other than my master; not that I neglected to tell and advise him before hand to consider what he was about, and think what a sin it would be to let loose those who were going to the galleys, for the most grievous enormities." "You blockhead, cried Don Quixote incensed, it neither concerns, nor belongs to knights-errant, to examine whether the afflicted, the enslaved and oppressed, whom they meet on the highway, are reduced to these wretched circumstances by their crimes or their misfortunes; our business is only to assist them in their distress, having an eye to their sufferings, and not to their demerits. I chanced to light upon a string of miserable and discontented objects, in behalf of whom I acted according to the dictates of my religion, without minding the consequence; and he who takes umbrage at what I have done, saving the sacred character and honourable person of Mr Licentiate, is, I insist upon it, utterly ignorant of chivalry, and lies like the base-born son of a whore; and this assertion I will make good with my sword, in the most ample manner." So saying, he fixed himself in the stirrups, and cocked his heaver; the barber's bason, which he mistook for Mambrino's helmet, hanging uselefs at the saddle-bow, until the damage it received from the galley-slaves could be repaired.

Dorothea, who was equally prudent and witty, understanding that every body present, except Sancho, diverted

diver
Don
ent
indig
youn
whic
adve
your
Mr
berty
three
times
redon
swear
have
dam,
the ju
proce
have
but n
speech
acqu
tell n
perfor
full v
answe
with a
knigh
refum
with y
At
close
discre
was a
examp
saddle
Vo

diverted themselves with the extravagant humour of Don Quixote, was willing to have her share of the entertainment, and accordingly, perceiving that his indignation was raised, "Sir knight, said she, I hope your worship will remember your promise to me, by which you are restricted from engaging in any other adventure, howsoever pressing it may be. Subdue your resentment therefore, and be assured, that I had Mr Licentiate known the galley-slaves were set at liberty by that invincible arm, he would have taken three stitches in his mouth, and bit his tongue three times, rather than have uttered one word that should redound to the prejudice of your worship." "That I swear I would have done, said the curate, ay, and have plucked off one of my whiskers to boot." "Madam, answered the knight, I am silent. I will restrain the just indignation which begins to rise within me, and proceed in the utmost peace and quiet, until I shall have fulfilled the boon I promised to your highness: but in recompence for this my kind intention, I beseech you, if it be not too much trouble, to make me acquainted with the nature of your misfortune; and tell me the number, quality, and condition of those persons on whom I am to take just satisfaction and full vengeance, in your behalf." "With all my heart, answered Dorothea, though I am afraid of tiring you with a recital of my woes and misfortunes." The knight assured her that would be impossible; and she resumed, "Well then, be so good as to favour me with your attention."

At these words, Cardenio and the barber went up close to her, in order to hear what story she, in her discretion, would invent; and Sancho Panza, who was as much deceived as his master, followed their example. After she had seated herself firmly in the saddle, cleared her pipes with a hem or two, and

made other preliminary gestures, she, with great sprightliness, thus began :

“ In the first place, gentlemen, you must know, that my name is——.” Here she made a full stop, having forgot how the curate had christened her : but this defect was soon remedied ; for, immediately conceiving the cause of her hesitation, he said, “ It is no wonder, madam, that your highness is disturbed and disordered at the recollection of your misfortunes, which are often so great as to impair the memory to such a degree, that the afflicted cannot even remember their own names : this effect they have had upon you, madam, who have forgot that you are the princess Micomicona, legitimate heiress of the great kingdom of Micomicon. With the assistance of this hint, your highness will easily recal the whole thread of your story, to your sorrowful remembrance.” “ You are in the right, replied the damsel ; and I believe I shall be able to bring my true narrative to a happy conclusion, without further prompting.

The king, my father, whose name was Tinacrio the sage, foresaw, by his profound skill in magic, that my mother, who was called queen Zaramilla, would die before him ; and that, as he himself must quit this life soon after, I should be left an helpless orphan : but this consideration, he said, did not give him so much pain and confusion, as the certain foreknowledge, that a monstrous giant, lord of a great island that bordered on our kingdom, called Pandafilando of the gloomy aspect : (for, it is affirmed, that although his eyes are, like any other person’s, placed in the middle of his face, he always looks askance, as if he squinted ; and this obliquity the malicious tyrant practises, in order to surprise and intimidate those who behold him :) I say, my father foresaw by his art, that this giant, informed of my being an orphan, would invade me with a great army, and deprive me of my whole kingdom,
with-

without leaving so much as a village for my retreat ; and that nothing could prevent this my ruin and misfortune, unless I would consent to marry him ; though so far as he could learn, it would never come into my thoughts to make such an unequal match : and truly his conjecture was well founded ; for it never entered into my head to marry this giant, or other person, howsoever tall and unmeasurable he might be. My father, therefore, advised me, that when, after his death, I should get notice that Pandafilando was beginning to invade my kingdom ; I should not stay to put myself in a posture of defence, which would prove my destruction, but freely leave him the possession of my realms, if I was resolved to avoid my own death, and to prevent the total destruction of my good and faithful subjects : for it would be impossible to defend myself against the infernal force of the giant : but that I should immediately set out for Spain, where I would find a remedy for all my misfortunes, in the person of a certain knight-errant, whose fame would be at that time spread over the whole kingdom, and whose name, if I rightly remember, would be Don Hackshot, or Kickshot.” “ Don Quixote, your ladyship would say, cried Sancho, interposing, alias the Knight of the Rueful Countenance.” “ The very same, replied Dorothea ; he told me moreover, that this knight would be a tall man, with a long meagre visage, and have on his right side below his left shoulder, or thereabouts, a grey mole garnished with hairs, which bear some resemblance to a hog’s bristles.”

Don Quixote, hearing this circumstance, said to his squire, “ Come hither, son Sancho, and help me to slip ; for I want to see if I am actually the knight of whom that sage king foretold.” “ Why should your worship slip ?” said Dorothea. “ In order to satisfy myself about that mole which your royal father mentioned.” “ You need not give yourself the

trouble, said Sancho, I know your worship hath just such a mole on the middle of your back-bone, which is a sign of strength." "That assurance is sufficient, resumed Dorothea, for, among friends, we ought not to stand upon trifles; and it is of very little consequence whether the mole be upon the shoulder or the back-bone; provided there is really such a mark on any part of your body, which is all composed of the same flesh: without doubt, my worthy father was right in every thing he prognosticated; and I have exactly followed his directions, in recommending my cause to the protection of Signor Don Quixote, who is certainly the individual knight my father described; since his features correspond with his fame, which fills not only Spain, but likewise the whole province of la Mancha*; for scarce had I landed at Ossuna, than hearing of his vast exploits, my mind suggested that he must be the very person I came in quest of." "How could your highness, said Don Quixote, land at Ossuna, which is not a sea-port."

Before she had time to make a reply, the curate took the task up himself, saying, "The princess must mean, that after she landed at Malaga, Ossuna was the first place in which she heard of your worship." "That was my meaning," said Dorothea. "There is nothing more plain, answered the priest, and now, your majesty may proceed." "I have nothing more to say, resumed the princess, but that, at length, destiny has been so favourable to me in my finding Don Quixote, I reckon, and look upon myself as queen again, and mistress of my whole realms, since out of his great courtesy and magnificence he hath promised, in consequence of the boon I asked, to go

* This is a diverting example of the Bathos, not unlike that anticlimax repeated in the art of sinking.

Nor Alps, nor Appenines could keep us out,
Nor fortified redoubt!

with me whithersoever I shall conduct him; and my intention is no other than to bring him face to face with Pandafilando of the gloomy aspect, that he may, by putting him to death, restore me to the possession of that which he so unjustly usurps; and all this will literally happen, as it was prophesied by my worthy father Tinacrio the sage, who hath also left it written in Chaldean or Greek characters, for I cannot read them, that if the knight mentioned in the prophecy should, after having cut off the giant's head, demand me in marriage, I must instantly accept of him as my lawful husband, without the least hesitation, and give him immediate possession of my person and throne.

Don Quixote, hearing this circumstance, cried, "What do you think now, friend Sancho? do ye hear what passes? and did not I tell thee as much? Observe now, whether or not we have not a queen to marry, and a kingdom to govern." "Adzookers! it is even so, cried the squire; and plague upon the son of a whore who refuses to marry her, as soon as Mr Pandafilando's waistband is cut: then, what a delicate morsel the queen is! odd! I wish all the fleas in my bed were such as she!" So saying, he cut a brace of capers, with marks of infinite satisfaction, then running up, and taking hold of the bridle of Dorothea's mule, made her halt, while he, falling down on his knees before her, besought the princess to let him kiss her hand, in token of his receiving her as his queen and mistress. Which of the company could behold the madness of the master, and the simplicity of the man, without laughing! Dorothea actually gave him her hand, and promised to make him a grandee, as soon as, by the favour of heaven, she should be restored to the possession of her kingdom; and he thanked her in terms which redoubled the mirth of all present.

"This, gentlemen, added the damsel, is my story; and nothing now remains but to tell you, that of all the people who attended me when I left my own country, not one survives, except this well bearded squire; all the rest having perished in a dreadful storm that overtook us after we were within sight of land: he and I miraculously floated to the shore on two planks; and indeed the whole course of my life, as you may have observed in my narration, hath been full of mystery and wonder. If I have in any thing exceeded the bounds of credibility, or been less accurate than I ought, I hope you will impute it to that cause assigned by the Licentiate, in the beginning of my story, namely the continual and extraordinary affliction that often impairs the memory of the unfortunate."

"But mine shall not be impaired, most high and virtuous lady! said Don Quixote, by all the misfortunes I shall undergo in your service, let them be never so great and unprecedented: therefore, I again confirm the boon I have promised, and swear to attend you even to the world's end, until I get sight of that ferocious adversary of yours, whose proud head I hope to slice off, with the assistance of God, my own arm, and the edge of this (I will not say good) sword; thanks to Gines de * Passamonte, who run away with my own:—" (this last apostrophe he muttered between his teeth, and then proceeded aloud, saying,) "And after I shall have deprived him of his head, and put you in peaceable possession of your throne, you shall be at free liberty to dispose of your person, according to your own will and pleasure; for, while my memory is engrossed, my will enslaved, and my understanding subjected to her who—I say no more, but that it is impossible I should incline, or have the least

* If the knight was robbed of his own sword by Gines where did he find that which he wore on this occasion?

thought

though
she w

Sa
tion o
his vo
Don C
elle y
born
will o
presen
more
not h
that s
How
pect,
rooms
name,
that o
your c
nant,
with t

Do
blasph
and li
ble, o
charg
broug
rothea
would
spot.
plebei
hands
done,
you?
cated
would
cinea.

thought towards marrying any other person though she were a perfect phoenix."

Sancho was so much disgusted at this last declaration of his master refusing the marriage, that raising his voice, he cried, with great indignation, "Signor Don Quixote, I vow and swear your worship is crazy, else you would never boggle at marrying such a high-born princess as this! Do you imagine that fortune will offer such good luck at every turn, as she now presents? or pray, do you think my lady Dulcinea more handsome than the princess? I am sure she is not half so beautiful, and will even venture to say, that she is not worthy to tie her majesty's shoe strings. How the plague shall I ever obtain the earldom I expect, if your worship goes thus a fishing for mushrooms at sea? Marry her, marry her, in the devil's name, without much ado; lay hold on this kingdom that drops, as it were, into your hand; and, after your coronation, make me a marquis or lord-lieutenant, and then the devil, if he will, may run away with the rest."

Don Quixote was enraged, when he heard such blasphemies uttered against his mistress Dulcinea, and lifting up his lance, without speaking a syllable, or giving the least notice of his intention, discharged two such hearty blows upon the squire, as brought him instantly to the ground, and had not Dorothea called aloud, and begged of him to forbear, would certainly have murdered poor Sancho on the spot. "Do you think, (said he, after some pause) you plebeian scoundrel, that I will always stand with my hands in my pockets; and that there is nothing to be done, but for you to misbehave, and for me to forgive you? I'll teach you better manners, you excommunicated rascal, for such to be sure you are, else you would not wag your tongue against the peerless Dulcinea. Don't you know, you groveling beggarly villain,

lain, that were it not for the valour with which she inspires this arm, I should not have enough to kill a flea? Tell me, you viperish scoffer, what you think hath won this kingdom, cut off the giant's head, and made you a marquis, for all this I look upon as already done and determined? Is it not the valour of Dulcinea that makes use of my arm as the instrument of her exploits! In me she fights and overcomes: in her I live, breathe, and have my being. O thou whore son, ungrateful ruffian, who see'st thyself raised from the dust of the earth to the rank of nobility, and repayest the obligation by slandering thy benefactors."

Sancho was not so roughly handled but he heard every syllable that his master spoke, and starting up as nimbly as he could, ran behind Dorothea's palfrey, from whence, he said to the knight, "Pray, Sir, if your worship is determined against marrying this great princess, is it not plain that the kingdom cannot be yours; and if that be the case, what favours can you bestow upon me? This is what I complain of. I would your worship would, once for all, marry this queen, who is, as it were, rained down from heaven upon us; and then you may converse with my lady Dulcinea according to the custom of some kings who keep concubines. As to the affair of beauty, I will not intermeddle, but, if the truth may be told, I like them both very well, though I never saw my lady Dulcinea in my life." "How! not seen her? blasphemous traitor! cried Don Quixote; have you not just brought a message from her?" "I say, answered Sancho, that when I saw her, I had not an opportunity of examining the particulars of her beauty and good qualities one by one; but altogether, she pleased me very much." "Now, Sancho, said Don Quixote, I exculpate thee, and thou must forgive what I did in my wrath; for no man can command the first emotions of his passion." "That I can plainly perceive, answered

answered the squire, and therefore, the desire of speaking is always the first motion in me; and truly, when once my tongue begins to itch, I cannot for my blood keep it within my teeth." "For all that, friend Sancho, said the knight, I would have you consider before you speak: for, though the pitcher goes often to the well—I need not mention what follows:" "In good time, replied the squire, there is a God above, who sees the snare, and will judge which of us is most to blame; I in speaking or your worship in doing evil." "Let there be no more of this, Sancho, said Dorothea, but run and kiss your master's hand, and beg his pardon; and henceforth, set a better guard upon your praise and disparagement: above all things, beware of saying any thing to the prejudice of that lady Toboso, whom I know by nothing else than my inclination to serve her: and if you put your trust in God, you will not fail of acquiring some estate, by which you will live like a prince."

Sancho took her advice, and, hanging his head, went to beg a kiss of his master's hand, which was granted with great solemnity of deportment; nay, the knight gave him his blessing also, desiring he would attend him while he rode on a little before the rest of the company, that he might have a better opportunity of asking a few questions, and conversing with him about affairs of the utmost importance. Sancho obeyed the order, and the two having advanced a good way before the rest, "Since thy return, said Don Quixote, I have had neither time nor convenience, to enquire about many particular circumstances of thy embassy, with the answer thou hast brought: and now, that fortune favours us with a fit opportunity, thou must not deny me the pleasure I shall receive from thy agreeable information." "Your worship, answered the squire, may ask as many questions as you please: I shall make every thing come out as clear as
it

it went in : but I entreat your worship, dear Sir, not to be so revengeful for the future." "Why dost thou call me revengeful," said the knight? "Because, resumed the squire, those blows I was just now honoured with, were more owing to the quarrel the devil picked between us t'other night, than to any thing I said against my lady Dulcinea, whom I love and reverence as a relic, though she be not one, merely because she appertains to your worship." "No more of these reflections, on thy life, said Don Quixote; else thou wilt give me fresh umbrage: I freely forgave thee at that time, and thou knowest, that, according to the common observation, Every new fault deserves a new penance."

While this conversation passed between them, they perceived a man riding towards them on an ass; and when he came a little nearer, discerned him to be a gypsie: but Sancho Panza, who sent his soul abroad with his eyes, to examine every ass that appeared, no sooner beheld the rider, than he recognized Gines de Passamonte, and by the thread of the gypsie discovered the clue of his own ass; for it was actually Dapple that carried Passamonte, who, for the better convenience of selling the beast, had disguised himself in the dress of a gypsie, whose language, with many others, he could speak as fluently as his mother tongue. Sancho saw and recollected him, and no sooner had he seen and recollected him, than he bellowed forth, "Ah, villain Ginesillo! restore my goods—give me back the comfort of my life—rob me not of my heart's content—give me my ass—give me my darling—fly, —thief—skip, robber: and seek not to preserve that which is none of thy own."

There was no need of all this exclamation and reproach; for Gines leaped off at the first word, and at a pretty round trot, which might have passed for a gallop, made the best of his way, and vanished in a twinkling.

twink
with g
my d
my ey
been a
ed the
answe
joy of
assured
the pr
and S
WH
selves,
ed wit
to the
blance
of ch
good p
but, b
vinces
she ma
so, ref
ters b
with
swallo
are de
cal bo
denio,
so fer
force
able c
travag
the si
other
a man
you de
upon

twinkling. Sancho running to his ass, embraced it with great affection, saying, "How hast thou been, my dear Dapple? my trusty companion and joy of my eyes!" Then kissed and caressed it as if it had been a Christian; while Dapple very peaceably received these demonstrations of love and kindness, without answering one word. The whole company wished him joy of his recovery; particularly Don Quixote, who assured him, that although he had retrieved Dapple, the promise of the three colts should not be annulled; and Sancho thanked him for his generosity.

While the master and man were conversing by themselves, the curate told Dorothea, that she had behaved with great discretion in her story, both with regard to the matter and brevity of it, as well as the resemblance it bore to those legends that are found in books of chivalry. She observed, that she had employed a good part of her leisure time in reading such romances, but, being ignorant of the situation of different provinces and sea-ports, she had spoke at random, when she mentioned her landing at Ossuna." "I thought so, resumed the priest, and made all haste to adjust matters by what I said; but is it not very strange, to see with what facility this poor unfortunate gentleman swallows all those lies and fictions, merely because they are delivered in the stile and manner of his nonsensical books." "So very strange and singular, said Cardenio, that I question if there be any genius whatever so fertile as to frame such a character by the mere force of invention." "And what is a very remarkable circumstance, replied the curate, waving those extravagancies which this worthy gentleman utters upon the subject of his disorder, he can discourse upon other topics with surprising ability, and appears to be a man of great knowledge and intellects: so that, if you do not touch upon chivalry, his hearers must look upon him as a person of excellent understanding.

While

While they were engaged in this conversation, Don Quixote proceeded in his with Sancho, to whom he said, "Come, friend Panza, let us forget what is past, with regard to animosity, and tell me, without any ingredient of rancour and resentment, where and how you found Dulcinea? What was she doing? What did she say? What answer did she make? How did she look when she read my letter? Who transcribed it for her perusal? These particulars, and every other circumstance of the affair, which you think worthy to be known, asked and answered, I expect you will explain, without seeking to increase my pleasure with false additions, much less to diminish it by malicious omission." "Signor, answered Sancho, if the truth must be told, nobody transcribed the letter; because I had no letter to be transcribed." "That is very true, replied the knight; for, two days after thy departure, I found the pocket book in which it was written; a circumstance that gave me infinite pain, as I could not conceive what thou wouldst do, when the mistake should appear; indeed I always imagined thou wouldst have returned hither immediately upon the discovery." "That would certainly have been the case, said the squire, if, when your worship read it to me, I had not retained it in my memory so perfect as to be able to dictate it to a parish clerk, who, as I repeated, transcribed it so exactly, that he said, in all the days of his life, though he had read many letters of excommunication, he had never seen such a clever letter as yours." "And dost thou still retain it," said Don Quixote. "No, Sir, replied Sancho. For, after I had put it into her hand, I thought there was no further occasion to retain it, and therefore let it slip out of my remembrance; or, if any part remains, it is that of the subterrene—I mean sovereign lady, and the conclusion, Yours till death, the Knight of the Rueful Countenance; with about three hundred

hundred souls, and lives, and pigsaies, which I set down in the middle."

CHAP. IV.

The savoury conversation that passed between Don Quixote and his squire Sancho Panza; with many other incidents.

"ALL this is pretty well; proceed, said Don Quixote: how was that queen of beauty employed, when you arrived? I dare say you found her stringing pearls, or embroidering some device for this her captive knight, with threads of gold." "No, truly, answered the squire; I found her winnowing two bushels of wheat in the yard." "Then you may depend upon it, resumed the knight, the grains of that wheat were converted into pearls by the touch of her hand: and didst thou observe, my friend, whether it was of the finer or common sort?" "Why neither, said Sancho, it seemed to be as it were red wheat." "But, since it was winnowed by her fair hands, answered Don Quixote, I dare affirm, it will make the whitest bread in Spain. Go on with thy information. When the letter was delivered did she not kiss it, and place it on the crown of her head, in token of respect? did she not perform some ceremony worthy of such a letter? pray how did she receive it?" "When I presented the letter, answered Sancho, she was in a main hurry, winnowing a large heap of wheat that was in her sieve; and said to me, Friend, lay down the letter on that sack: for I cannot pretend to read it, until I have made an end of my work." "Discreet lady! cried the knight; her intention certainly was to read it at her leisure, that she might recreate herself with the contents.—Proceed, Sancho—and while she was thus employed, what conversation passed between you?

what questions did she ask concerning me? and what answers didst thou make? Recount the whole, without leaving one syllable untold."

"She asked me no questions, replied the squire; but I told her how I had left your worship doing penance for love of her, skipping among those rocks, naked from the waste, upwards, like a mere savage, sleeping on the bare ground; neglecting to eat your food like a christian, or to comb your beard like a decent man, but whining, and weeping, and cursing your fortune." "If you said I cursed my fortune, you misrepresented me, said Don Quixote; for I bless my fate, and will bless it all the days of my life, for having made me worthy to aspire to the love of such an high lady as Dulcinea del Toboso." "High indeed! answered Sancho, for, in faith, she is a good hand taller than I am." "How, hast thou been measured with her, Sancho!" said the knight. "I'll tell you how, answered the squire; while I was helping to lay a load of corn upon an ass, we came so close together, that I could easily perceive she over-topped me by a full hand." "That may be true, said Don Quixote; though her tallness is accompanied and adorned by a myriad of mental graces. But, this you will not deny, Sancho, that while you was so near her, your nostrils were regaled by a Sabæan odour, an aromatic fragrance, a certain delicious sensation, for which there is no name. I mean a scent, a perfume, such as fills the shop of some curious glover." "All that I can say, answered Sancho, is that I was sensible of a sort of rammish smell, which, I believe, was owing to her being in a muck sweat with hard work." "That is impossible, cried the knight; thy sense must have been depraved; or that smell must have proceeded from thy own body; for I am perfectly well acquainted with the odour of that rose among briars, that lilly of the valley, that liquid amber." "It may

be so, said Sancho : I have often known such smells come from myself, as then seemed to come from my lady Dulcinea : but that is not to be wondered at ; because, as the saying is, every fiend may stink of basilstone." " Well then, added Don Quixote, she hath now winnowed the wheat, and sent it to the mill, how did she behave after she had read my letter ?"

" The letter, answered Sancho, was not read at all : for, as she could neither read nor write, she chose to rend and tear it to pieces, rather than give it to any body who might publish her secrets in the village ; saying, she was very well satisfied with the information I gave her, by word of mouth, concerning your worship's love for her, and the extraordinary penance I left you doing on her account. Finally, she bade me tell you, that she kissed your worship's hands, being much more desirous of seeing than writing to you ; and therefore she intreated and commanded your worship, by these presents, to quit this desert, and leave off playing the fool, and forthwith set out on your journey to Toboso, provided that something else of greater importance should not happen ; for she longed very much for a sight of your worship : and laughed heartily when I told her, that you had taken the name of the Knight with the Rueful Countenance. When I asked, if the Biscayan had been lately with her, she answered, Yes ; and that he was very much of a gentleman : but, when I enquired about the galley-slaves, she said, she had as yet seen none of them."

" Hitherto, all goes well, said the knight ; but pray tell me what jewel she gave you at parting, for the news you had brought of me her lover ; for it is an ancient practice and custom among knights-errant and their mistresses, to bestow upon their squires, damsels, or dwarfs, who bring them news of each other, some rich jewel, as a reward and acknowledgment for the message." " It may be so, said Sancho,

what questions did she ask concerning me? and what answers didst thou make? Recount the whole, without leaving one syllable untold."

"She asked me no questions, replied the squire; but I told her how I had left your worship doing penance for love of her, skipping among those rocks, naked from the waste, upwards, like a mere savage, sleeping on the bare ground; neglecting to eat your food like a christian, or to comb your beard like a decent man, but whining, and weeping, and cursing your fortune." "If you said I cursed my fortune, you misrepresented me, said Don Quixote; for I bless my fate, and will bless it all the days of my life, for having made me worthy to aspire to the love of such an high lady as Dulcinea del Toboso." "High indeed! answered Sancho, for, in faith, she is a good hand taller than I am." "How, hast thou been measured with her, Sancho!" said the knight. "I'll tell you how, answered the squire; while I was helping to lay a load of corn upon an ass, we came so close together, that I could easily perceive she over-topped me by a full hand." "That may be true, said Don Quixote; though her tallness is accompanied and adorned by a myriad of mental graces. But, this you will not deny, Sancho, that while you was so near her, your nostrils were regaled by a Sabæan odour, an aromatic fragrance, a certain delicious sensation, for which there is no name. I mean a scent, a perfume, such as fills the shop of some curious glover." "All that I can say, answered Sancho, is that I was sensible of a sort of rammish smell, which, I believe, was owing to her being in a muck sweat with hard work." "That is impossible, cried the knight; thy sense must have been depraved; or that smell must have proceeded from thy own body; for I am perfectly well acquainted with the odour of that rose among briars, that lilly of the valley, that liquid amber." "It may

be so, said Sancho: I have often known such smells come from myself, as then seemed to come from my lady Dulcinea: but that is not to be wondered at; because, as the saying is, every fiend may stink of basilstone." "Well then, added Don Quixote, she hath now winnowed the wheat, and sent it to the mill, how did she behave after she had read my letter?"

"The letter, answered Sancho, was not read at all: for, as she could neither read nor write, she chose to rend and tear it to pieces, rather than give it to any body who might publish her secrets in the village; saying, she was very well satisfied with the information I gave her, by word of mouth, concerning your worship's love for her, and the extraordinary penance I left you doing on her account. Finally, she bade me tell you, that she kissed your worship's hands, being much more desirous of seeing than writing to you; and therefore she intreated and commanded your worship, by these presents, to quit this desert, and leave off playing the fool, and forthwith set out on your journey to Toboso, provided that something else of greater importance should not happen; for she longed very much for a sight of your worship: and laughed heartily when I told her, that you had taken the name of the Knight with the Rueful Countenance. When I asked, if the Biscayan had been lately with her, she answered, Yes; and that he was very much of a gentleman: but, when I enquired about the galley-slaves, she said, she had as yet seen none of them."

"Hitherto, all goes well, said the knight; but pray tell me what jewel she gave you at parting, for the news you had brought of me her lover; for it is an ancient practice and custom among knights-errant and their mistresses, to bestow upon their squires, damsels, or dwarfs, who bring them news of each other, some rich jewel, as a reward and acknowledgment for the message." "It may be so, said Sancho,

and I think it an excellent custom ; but that must have been in time past : for, in this age, it is customary to give nothing but a piece of bread and cheese, which was all the present I received from my lady Dulcinea, who reached it over the yard wall, when I took my leave ; by this token, that the cheese was made of ewe's milk." " She is liberal to excess, said the knight ; and if she omitted giving thee a jewel, it must certainly have been owing to her not having any by her ; but all in good time * : I shall see her soon, and then every thing will be set to rights. Yet, there is one thing, Sancho, which overwhelms me with astonishment. You seem to have travelled through the air ; for you have spent little more than three days in your journey ; though Toboso is more than thirty leagues distant from hence. From this extraordinary expedition, I conjecture, that the sage, who is my friend, and interests himself in my affairs, and such there certainly is, and must be, else I should be no true knight-errant : I say, this enchanter must have assisted thee in thy journey, though thou didst not perceive it ; for some there are of that class, who will take up a knight-errant while he is asleep in his bed, and without his knowing any thing of the matter, he shall awake next morning in some place more than a thousand leagues from the house where he took up his lodging the night before ; and without such sudden transportations, it would be impossible for knights to succour each other in distress, as they frequently do. A knight-errant, for example, happens to be fighting in the desarts of Armenia, with some fierce dragon, dreadful goblin, or rival knight ; and being worked, and just at the point of being slain, behold, when he least expects it, there suddenly appears in a cloud or fiery chariot, another knight, a

* Literally, Sleeves are good even after Easter, i. e. Though a good thing comes late, it is never unreasonable.

friend of his, who, but a minute before, resided in England, and who assists and delivers him from death ; and that same night, he finds himself supping at his ease in his own house, which is often two or three thousand leagues from the field of battle : and all this is effected by the industry and art of sage enchanters, who take those valiant knights under their protection.

Wherefore, friend Sancho, I can easily believe, that thou hast in so little time travelled from hence to Toboso and back again ; because, as I have already observed, some friendly sage must have carried thee through the air, though thou didst not perceive it.” “ Not unlikely, replied, the squire, for, in good faith, Rozinante went like a gypsy’s ass, with quicksilver in his ears.” “ With quicksilver, cried the knight ; ay, and a legion of demons to boot, who are beings that travel themselves, and make other people travel as fast as they please, without tiring.”

But, waving this subject, how dost thou think I ought to regulate my conduct, now that my mistress commands me to appear in her presence ? for although I find myself obliged to comply with her orders, I am utterly incapacitated by the boon I have granted to this princess ; and I am bound by the laws of chivalry, to fulfil my promise, before I indulge my inclination. On one hand, I am persecuted and harassed by the desire of seeing Dulcinea ; on the other, I am incited and invited by my honour, and the glory I shall acquire in this enterprize. I am therefore determined to travel with all expedition, until I arrive at the place where the giant resides, and when I shall have restored the princess to the peaceful possession of her kingdom, after having shortened the usurper by the head, I will return to the rays of that beauty which enlightens my thoughts ; and excuse myself in such a manner as to obtain her forgiveness, as she will plainly perceive that my delay tended to the increase

of her glory and fame : seeing all my reputation in arms, past, present, or to come, proceeds from her favour and inspiration." " Lord ! cried Sancho, how your worship is concerned about a parcel of potsherds. Pray tell me, sir, do you intend to make this journey for nothing ; and to let such a rich and noble marriage as this slip through your fingers, while the dowry is no less than a kingdom ; which, I have actually heard, is more than twenty thousand leagues round, plentifully stored with every thing that is needful for the sustenance of mortal man, and larger than Portugal and Castile put together ? Hold your tongue, a God's name, and take shame to yourself for what you have said : pardon my freedom, take my advice, and marry in the first place where we can find a curate ; or make use of our friend the licentiate, who will buckle you handsomely. Take notice therefore, that I am of an age to give good counsel, and this that I offer will fit you to a hair ; for, a bird in hand is worth two in the bush ; and, as the saying is, He that hath good in his view, and yet will not evil eschew, his folly deserveth to rue."

" Sancho, answered Don Quixote, if thou advisest me to marry, with a view of seeing me king, after I shall have killed the giant, that I may have an opportunity of rewarding thee with what I have promised, thou must know, that I can easily gratify thy wishes, without wedding the princess ; for, before I engage in the combat, I will covenant, that, provided I come off conqueror, and decline the marriage, I shall have it in my power to dispose of one part of the kingdom as I shall think proper ; and to whom should I give it but to thee ?" " That is very plain, replied the squire ; but I beseech your worship to make choice of the sea coast, because if I should happen to dislike the country, I may ship off my black slaves, and sell them as I have already hinted. Wherefore, without trou-

bling

bling yourself, at present, about my lady Dulcinea, I would have you go and slay the giant, and conclude that affair, from which, before God! we shall certainly reap much honour and advantage." "I tell thee, Sancho, said Don Quixote, thou art in the right, and I will follow thy advice, so far as it regards my attendance upon the princess, before I visit Dulcinea. But say not a word to any body, even those of our company not excepted, of this conversation; for, as she is so reserved and careful of concealing her sentiments, it would be inexcusable in me, if I, or any other through my means, should disclose them." "Since this is the case, said the squire, why does your worship command all those that are vanquished by your arm, to go and present themselves before my lady Dulcinea? You may as well give it under your hand, that you are her true and trusty lover: for if you compel them to fall upon their knees before her, and say they are sent by your worship to pay homage to her, how is it possible that the sentiments of either you or her can be concealed?

"What an ignorant and simple fellow thou art! resumed the knight, canst thou not see that all this redounds to her praise and exaltation?—Thou must know that in our stile of chivalry, it is deemed a great honour for a lady to be admired by a great many knights, whose wishes extend no farther than to the desire of serving her for her own sake, without expecting any other reward for their great and manifold services, than the glory of being admitted into the number of her knights." "In like manner, said Sancho, I have heard a priest in the pulpit observe, that we must love our Saviour for his own sake, without being moved thereto, by any fear of punishment, or hopes of applause: though, for my own part, I am inclined to love and serve him, on account of his power." "Now, the devil take the clown! cried Don Quixote,

Quixote, he sometimes makes such shrewd observations, that one would think he had actually studied!" "And yet, upon my conscience, answered the squire, I know not so much as my letters." At that instant Mr Nicholas calling aloud to them to stop a little, that the rest might have time to drink at a spring which they found in the way; Don Quixote turned back, to the no small satisfaction of Sancho, who was already tired with telling lies, and afraid of being detected by his master; for, although he knew that Dulcinea was the daughter of a peasant at Toboso, he had never seen her in his life. By this time Cardenio had put on the clothes which Dorothea wore when they found her; and though they were none of the most elegant, he made a much better figure than with his tattered dress, which he now threw away. The whole company sat down by the spring, where, while they appeased the keen hunger that possessed them all, with what the curate had brought from the inn, a lad chanced to pass that way, who looking earnestly at the whole company, at length run up to Don Quixote, and embracing his knees, began to blubber most heartily, saying, "Ah! signor, don't you know me? look at me again: I am that same individual young man, called Andrew, whom your worship delivered from the tree to which I was tied." The knight recollected his features, and taking him by the hand, addressed himself to the company in these words:

"That you may see of what importance knight-errantry is, to redress the wrongs and grievances which are daily committed by the insolent and wicked wretches who live upon this earth, know, that, as I passed by a wood some time ago, I heard the screams and woeful cries of some afflicted creature, in the utmost distress; and in consequence of my oath and obligation, riding towards the place from which the lamentation seemed to come, I found this very young man
tied

tied to an oak tree; and I am glad, from my soul, that he is here in person to bear witness to the truth. I say, he was bound to an oak, naked from the waste upwards; and a peasant, who, I afterwards understood, was his master, stood scourging him with the reins of a bridle. When I enquired into the cause of this barbarous treatment, the rustic answered, that he only whipped his own servant for being guilty of some neglect that favoured more of knavishness than simplicity. The boy protested he had done nothing but asked his wages: to this affirmation the master replied by some asseverations, which I have forgot; but, though I heard his excuses, I would not admit of them. In short, I ordered the peasant to untie the youth, and made him swear, that he would carry him home, and pay him his wages in ready cash, nay, and pay him in rials that should be perfumed. Is not this literally true, son Andrew? didst thou not observe, with what authority I commanded, and with what humility he promised to comply with every thing that I imposed, suggested, and desired? Answer without perturbation or doubt, and tell this honourable company what passed, that they may see, and be convinced, of what use it is, as I said, to have knights-errant continually upon duty."

"All that your worship hath told is very true, answered the young man; but the end of the business was quite the reverse of what you imagined." "How! the reverse! cried the knight; has not the peasant paid thee thy wages?" "Far from paying me my wages, said Andrew; your worship was no sooner out of the wood, and we by ourselves again, than he bound me a second time to the same oak, and lashed me so severely, that I remained like St Bartholomew, dead alive; and at every stripe, he jeered and scoffed and made game of your worship in such a manner, that if it had not been for the excessive pain I felt, I could

not have refrained from laughing at what he said. In short, he treated me so cruelly, that till this very day I have been in the hospital, for the cure of the wounds I received from that mischievous farmer: and truly your worship was the cause of all that I suffered; for, if you had followed your own road, without going where nobody called you, or meddling with other people's affairs, my master would have been satisfied with giving me a cool dozen or two, and then loosed and paid me my due. But when your worship abused him so unseasonably, and called him so many bad names, his choler was inflamed; and as he could not be revenged upon you, as soon as you was gone, he discharged the storm of his wrath upon me in such a manner, that I shall never be my own man again."

"The misfortune, said the knight, was in my leaving him before I had seen thee paid; for I ought to have known, by long experience, that no peasant will keep his word, if he thinks it his interest to break it. But thou mayst remember, Andrew, that I swore, if he did not perform his promise, I would return and search for him, until he should be found, even if he should hide himself in the whale's belly." "Very true, replied Andrew; but that threat signified nothing." "Thou shalt presently see what it signifies," resumed Don Quixote, who getting up hastily, ordered Sancho to bridle Rozinante, who was following their example, in refreshing himself with grass.

When Dorothea asked what he intended to do, he replied, "he was going in quest of the peasant, to chastise him for his villanous behaviour, and make him pay Andrew to the last farthing, in despite and defiance of all the rustics upon earth." To this declaration, she answered, by desiring him to consider that, according to the promised boon, he could not engage in any enterprize, until her affair should be finished; and since this stipulation was known to himself better

than

than
his
a: T
mult
obse
to d
injur
And
alto
the
give
Lore
who
fairs
lunch
the y
this
Whe
him,
whic
shall
that
a hun
more
An
that
bows,
True
to D
Sir k
your
thoug
leave
but th
worsh

than to any other person, she intreated him to repress his resentment till his return from her kingdom. "That is very true, resumed the knight, and Andrew must wait with patience for my return, as your majesty observes; but I repeat my oath and my promise, never to desist until I shall have seen his wages paid, and his injuries revenged." "I don't trust to those oaths, said Andrew, and would rather at present have wherewithal to bear my expences to Sevil, than all the revenge in the world: be so good, if you have any victuals, to give me something to eat upon my journey, and the Lord be with your worship and all knights-errant, who, I wish, may always err as much in their own affairs, as they have done in mine." Sancho, taking a luncheon of bread and cheese from the store, gave it to the young man, saying, "Here, brother Andrew, take this: and now we have all shared in your misfortune." When Andrew asked, what share of it had fallen to him, he replied, "That share of bread and cheese which I have given you: and God knows whether I shall not feel the loss of it: for you must know, friend, that we squires of knights-errant are subject to many a hungry belly, with other misfortunes which are more easily felt than described."

Andrew accepted of the bread and cheese, and seeing that nobody offered him any thing else, made his bows, and as the saying is, took his foot in his * hand. True it is, before he departed, he addressed himself to Don Quixote, saying, "For the love of God! Sir knight-errant, if ever you meet me again, spare yourself the trouble of coming to my assistance, even though you should see me cut into minced meat, but leave me to my misfortune, which cannot be so great, but that it may be increased by the succour of your worship, whom God confound, together with all the

* Literally, Took the road in his hands.

knight-

knights-errant that ever were born." Don Quixote started up, in order to chastise him, but he ran away with such nimbleness, that nobody attempted to pursue him; and the knight was so ashamed of his exploit, that the company were at great pains to contain their laughter, to prevent his being quite out of countenance.

CHAP. V.

Which treats of what happened to Don Quixote and his company at the inn.

THEIR sumptuous meal being ended, they saddled their beasts, and without meeting any thing worthy of mention, arrived next day at the very inn which was so much the dread and terror of Sancho; but, unwilling as he was to enter, he could not avoid going into it. The innkeeper, his wife, daughter, and Martines, seeing Don Quixote and Sancho at the gate, went out to receive them with great demonstrations of joy; and the knight returned their compliments with grave deportment and solemn approbation, desiring them to prepare a better bed for him than that which he had occupied before. To this demand, the landlady answered, that, provided he would pay better than he did before, he should lie like a prince: he promised to see her satisfied, and they immediately made up a tolerable bed, in the same garret where he had formerly lodged, in which he laid himself down, very much disordered both in body and mind. He was no sooner locked up in his chamber, than the landlady attacked the barber, and seizing him by the beard, cried, "By my faith! you shall no longer use my tail for a beard. Give me my tail, I say, for it is a shame to see how my husband's thing is bandied about for want of it; I mean the comb that he used to stick

stick in my tail." But the barber would not part with it, for all her tugging, until the priest desired him to restore it; because there was no further occasion for the disguise, as he might now appear in his own shape, and tell the knight, that after he had been robbed by the galley slaves, he had fled to that inn; and if he should enquire for the princess's gentleman-usher, they would tell him she had dispatched him away before her, to advertise her friends and subjects that she was upon the road, accompanied by the deliverer of them all. Thus satisfied, the barber willingly restored the landlady's tail, and every thing else they had borrowed, with a view of disengaging Don Quixote from the mountain; and all the people of the inn were astonished at the beauty of Dorothea, as also at the genteel mien of the swain Cardenio. The curate ordered them to get ready something to eat; and the innkeeper, in hope of being well paid, dressed, with all dispatch, a pretty reasonable dinner; but they did not think proper to waken Don Quixote, who, they believed, stood at that time more in need of sleep than of food.

The discourse at table, in presence of the innkeeper, his wife, daughter, Maritornes, and all the other lodgers, happening to turn upon the uncommon madness of the knight, and the condition in which they found him; the hostess recounted to them what had happened in her house between him and the carrier; then looking round the room, and seeing Sancho was not present, she told the whole story of the blanketting, to the no small entertainment of the company. The curate observing that Don Quixote's understanding was disordered by the books of chivalry he had read, the innkeeper replied, I cannot conceive how that is possible; for really, in my opinion, they are the best reading in the world: I have now in my custody two or three of them, together with some other papers,

which, I verily believe, have preserved not only my life, but also that of many others ; for in harvest time a great number of reapers come hither to pass the heat of the day ; and there being always one among them who can read, he takes up a book, and we, to the number of thirty or more, forming a ring about him, listen with such pleasure, as were enough to make an old man grow young again ; at least, I can say for myself, when I hear him read of those furious and terrible strokes that have been given by certain knights, I am seized with the desire of being at it myself ; and could listen to such stories whole nights and days without ceasing." " I wish you would, with all my heart, replied the wife ; for I am sure, I never enjoy a quiet minute in the house, except when they are reading, and then you are so bamboozled with what you hear, you forget to scold for that time." That is the very truth of the matter, said Maritornes : in good faith, I myself am hugely diverted, when I hear those things ; they are so clever, especially when they tell us how yon t'other lady lay among orange trees in the embraces of her knight, while a duenna, half dead with envy and surprise, kept sentry over them—odd ! all these things make my chops water."

" And what is your opinion of the matter, my young mistress ?" said the priest to the innkeeper's daughter. " Truly, signor, I dont well know," she replied, " but listen among the rest, and really, tho' I do not understand it, I am pleased with what I hear: yet I take no delight in those strokes that my father loves; but in the lamentations made by the knights, when they are absent from their mistresses, which, in good sooth, often make me weep with compassion." " Then you would soon give them relief, if they mourned for you, my pretty maid," said Dorothea ? " I dont know what I should do," answered the girl ; " but this I know,

I know, that some of those ladies are so cruel, their knights call them lions, tigers, and a thousand other reproachful names. Jesus, I can't conceive what sort of folks those must be, who are so hard-hearted and unconscionable as to let a man of honour die, or lose his senses, rather than take the least notice of him: why should they be so coy? if their suitors court them in an honest way, let them marry, and that is all the men desire." "Hold your peace, child," said the landlady, "methinks you are too well acquainted with these things; young maidens, like you, should neither know nor speak so much." The daughter said, as the gentleman asked me the question, she could do no less than answer him: and the curate demanding a sight of the books, "With all my heart," replied the innkeeper, who, going to his own chamber, brought out an old portmanteau secured with a chain, which being opened, the priest found in it three large volumes, and some manuscripts written in a very fair character.

The first book they opened appeared to be Don Cirongilio of Thrace; the second, Felixmarte of Hyrcania; and the third was the history of that great captain Goncalo Hernandes de Cordova, with the life of Diego Garcia de Paredes. The curate having read the titles of the two first turned to the barber, saying, "We now want our friend's housekeeper and cousin." "Not at all, answered Mr Nicholas, I myself can convey them to the yard, or rather to the chimney, where there is actually a special good fire." What! you intend to burn these books, then," said the innkeeper? "Only these two," answered the curate, pointing to Don Cirongilio and Felixmarte, "I suppose then," resumed the landlord, "my books are heretic and flegmatic?" "You mean schismatic, honest friend and not flegmatic," said the barber. "Even so," replied the landlord; "but if any of them be burnt, let it be the history of that great captain, together

gether with Diego Garcia ; for I would rather suffer you to commit my son to the flames, than to burn e'er a one of the rest." " Hark-ye, brother, said the curate, these two books are stuffed with lies, vanity, and extravagance ; but that of the great captain is a true history, containing the exploits of Goncalo Hernandez de Cordova, who, by his numerous and valiant atchievements, acquired, all the world over, the epithet of the great captain, a renowned and splendid appellation, merited by him alone : and that Diego Garcia of Paredes was a noble cavalier, born in the city of Truxillo in Estremadura, a most valiant soldier, and endowed with such bodily strength, that with a single finger he could stop a mill-wheel in the heat of its motion ; and being once posted at the end of a bridge, with a two-handed sword, he alone prevented a vast army from passing over it : he performed a great many actions of the same kind, which he himself hath recounted with all the modesty of a gentleman who writes his own memoirs : whereas, had they been committed to writing by any other free and dispassionate author, they would have eclipsed all the Hectors, Achilleses, and Orlando's that ever lived." " You may tell such stuff to my grannam," said the innkeeper. " Lord ! how you are surpris'd at the stopping of a mill-wheel ! before God ! I advise your worship to read, as I have done *, the history of Felixmarte of Hyrcania, who, with a single back-stroke, cut five giants through the middle, as easily as if they had been made of beans, like the figures of which the boys divert themselves. Another time, he engaged a most infinite and powerful army, consisting of a million and six hundred thousand soldiers, all armed cap-a-pee, whom he totally routed, as if they had been flocks of sheep. Then

* I will appear in the sequel, that the landlord could not read at all ; nevertheless, he might boast of what he could not do.

what shall we say of the most excellent Don Cirongilio of Thrace, who was so valiant and courageous, as may be seen in the book of his history, that while he was sailing on the river, a fiery serpent rose above the water, which he no sooner saw, than leaping on its back, he fastened himself astride upon his scaly shoulders, and seized it by the throat with both hands, so forcibly, that the serpent feeling itself well-nigh strangled, could find no other remedy but dive into the profound with the knight, who would not quit his hold; and when he descended to the bottom, he found himself in a palace situated in the midst of a garden that was wonderfully pleasant; and then the serpent turned itself into an ancient man, who told him such things as you would rejoice to hear—Say no more, signor, if you was to hear it, you would run stark mad for joy—so that, a fig for your great captain, and that same Diego Garcia you talk of.”

Dorothea hearing this harangue whispered to Cardenio, “Our host wants not much to make the second edition of Don Quixote.” “I think so too,” answered Cardenio; “for by his discourse, he seems to take it for granted, that every thing which is recounted in these books is neither more nor less than the truth; and all the capuchins in Spain will not be able to alter his belief.” “Consider, brother,” resumed the curate, “that there never was upon earth such a person as Felixmarte of Hyrcania, nor Don Cirongilio of Thrace, nor any other of such knights as are celebrated in books of chivalry. The whole is a fiction composed by idle persons of genius, for the very purpose you mentioned, namely pastime, which was the aim of your reapers; for, I swear to you, no such knights ever existed, nor were any such exploits and extravagancies ever performed in this world.” “You must throw that bone to some other dog,” replied the landlady, as if I did not know that two and three make

five; or where my own shoe pinches. Your worship must not think to feed me with pap, for egad I am no such suckling: a good joke, faith! You would make me believe that all the contents of these books are madness and lies, although they are printed by licence from the king's council; as if they were persons who would wink at the printing of such lies, battles, and enchantments, as turn peoples brains." "Friend," replied the curate, "I have already told you, that they are designed for the amusement of our idle hours; and as in every well governed commonwealth, the games of chess, billiards and tennis, are licensed for the entertainment of those who neither can nor ought to work; in like manner those books are allowed to be printed, on the supposition, that nobody is so ignorant as to believe a syllable of what they contain; and if I was now permitted, or the company required it, I could give some hints towards the improvement of books of chivalry, which perhaps might be both serviceable and entertaining: but I hope the time will come, when I may have an opportunity of imparting my suggestions to those who can convert them to general use: mean while, Mr Publican, you may depend upon the truth of what I have said; take your books away, and settle the affair of their truth or falsehood just as your own comprehension will permit; much good may they do you, and God grant that you may never halt on the same foot on which your lodger Don Quixote is lame." "I hope," answered the innkeeper, "I shall never be mad enough to turn knight-errant, as I can easily perceive that the customs now-a-days are quite different from those in times past, when, as it is reported, those famous heroes travelled about the world."

Sancho, who had come into the room, about the middle of this conversation, was very much confounded and perplexed, when he heard them observe, that there

there was no such thing as knight-errantry in the present age, and that all the books of chivalry were filled with extravagance and fiction: he therefore determined within himself to wait the issue of his master's last undertaking; and if it should not succeed as happily as he expected, to leave him, and return, with his wife and children, to his former labour.

When the innkeeper took up the portmanteau with the books, in order to carry them away, "Stay, said the curate, until I examine these papers which are written in such fair character." The landlord accordingly pulled out a manuscript, consisting of eight sheets of paper, intitled, in large letters, * The novel of the Impertinent Curiosity. The priest having read three or four lines to himself, said, "Really the title of this novel pleases me so much, that I have a strong inclination to peruse the whole." To this observation the innkeeper replied, "Then your reverence may read it aloud; for, you must know, the reading of it hath given great satisfaction to several lodgers at this inn, who have earnestly begged the copy: but that request I would not comply with, because I think of restoring it to the right owner, as I expect that the person who left the portmanteau with the books and papers, in a mistake, will return, on purpose to fetch them; or, you know, he may chance to travel this way, on other business; and though I should miss them heavily, in faith they shall be restored; for, though an innkeeper, I am still a christian." "Friend, said the curate, you are very much in the right: but for all that, if I like the novel, you shall give me leave to transcribe it." "With all my heart, replied the landlord." While this discourse passed between them, Cardenio having taken up the manuscript, and begun to read, was of the curate's opinion, and

* The original, which is *Curioso Impertinente*, signifies, one who is impertinently curious, not a curious impertinent.

intreated him to read it aloud, that the whole company might hear it. "I will, answered the priest, if you think we had not better spend the time in sleeping than in reading." "For my own part, said Dorothea, it will be a sufficient refreshment for me, to listen to some entertaining story; for my mind is not composed enough to let me sleep, even if I stood in need of repose." "If that be the case, resumed the curate, I will read it out of curiosity, at a venture, and perhaps it will yield us some entertainment into the bargain." Mr Nicholas earnestly joined in the request, and Sancho himself expressed a desire of hearing it; upon which the licentiate finding he should please the whole company as well as himself; "Well then, said he, listen with attention, for the novel begins in this manner:"

CHAP. VI.

The Novel of the Impertinent Curiosity.

IN Florence, a rich and celebrated city of Italy, situated in the province called Tuscany, lived Anselmo and Lothario, two wealthy and noble cavaliers, so strictly united in the bands of amity, that every body who knew them called them by way of excellence and epithet, the Two Friends: and indeed, being both batchelors, and their age and education so much alike, it was not to be wondered at if a reciprocal affection sprung up between them: true it is, Anselmo was rather more addicted to amorous pastime than Lothario, whose chief delight was in hunting; yet, upon occasion, Anselmo could quit his own amusements to pursue those of his friend; and Lotharia could postpone his favourite diversion, in order to practise that of Anselmo: in this manner, their inclinations proceeded so mutually, that no clock ever went with more regularity.

city. Anselmo happened to fall desperately in love with a young lady of rank and beauty, in the same city, descended from such a noble family, and so amiable in herself, that he determined, with the approbation of his friend, without which he did nothing, to demand her of her parents in marriage; and accordingly put his resolution in practice. Lothario was intrusted with the message, and concluded the affair so much to the satisfaction of his friend, that in a very little time, Anselmo saw himself in possession of his heart's desire; and Camilla thought herself so happy in having obtained such a husband, that she was incessant in her acknowledgments to heaven and Lothario, by whose mediation her happiness was effected.

During the first two days after marriage, which are commonly spent in feasting and mirth, Lothario, as usual, frequented the house of his friend, with a view of honouring his nuptials, and endeavouring, as much as in him lay, to promote the joy and festivity attending all such occasions: but the wedding being over, and the frequency of visits and congratulations abated, he began carefully and gradually to absent himself from Anselmo's house, thinking, as every prudent person would naturally conclude, that a man ought not to visit and frequent the house of a friend after he is married, in the same manner as he had practised while he was single; for, tho' suspicion should never find harbour with true and virtuous friendship, yet the honour of a married man is so delicate, as to be thought subject to injury, not only from a friend, but even from a brother. Anselmo perceived Lothario's remissness, and complained of it loudly, saying, that if he had thought his marriage would have impaired their former correspondence, he never would have altered his condition; and begged, that as by the mutual friendship which inspired them while he was single, they had acquired such an agreeable title

as that of the Two Friends, he would not now suffer that endearing and celebrated name to be lost, by a scrupulous adherence to mere form and punctilio. He therefore intreated him, if he might be allowed to use the expression, to be master of his house, and to come in and go out as formerly, assuring him that the inclinations of Camilla, in that respect, were exactly conformable to his own; and that knowing the perfect friendship which subsisted between them, she was extremely mortified at his late shyness.

To these and many other arguments used by Anselmo, to persuade his friend to frequent his house as usual, Lothario answered with such prudence, force, and discernment, that the other was convinced of his discreet conduct; and it was agreed betwixt them, that Lothario should dine with him twice a week, besides holidays; but, notwithstanding this agreement, he resolved to comply with it no further than he should see convenient for the honour of Anselmo, which was dearer to him than his own. He said, and his observation was just, that a man on whom heaven hath bestowed a beautiful wife, should be as cautious of the men he brings home to his house, as careful in observing the female friends with whom his spouse converses abroad: for that which cannot be performed, nor concerted in the street or the church, or at public shews and diversions, with which a husband must sometimes indulge his wife, may be easily transacted in the house of a female friend or relation, in whom his chief confidence is reposed. Wherefore, Lothario observed, that every married man had occasion for some friend to apprize him of any omission in her conduct; for it often happens, that he is too much in love with his wife to observe, or too much afraid of offending her to prescribe limits to her behaviour, in those things, the following or eschewing of which may tend to his honour or reproach: whereas that in-
convenience

convenience might be easily amended by the advice of a friend. But where shall we find such a zealous, discreet, trusty friend, as is here required? I really know not, except in Lothario himself, who, consulting the honour of Anselmo with the utmost care and circumspection, was at great pains to contract, abridge, and diminish the number of the days on which he had agreed to frequent his house; that the idle, vulgar, and prying eyes of malice, might not indulge their love of slander, when they perceived a genteel young man of such birth, fortune, and accomplishments as he knew himself possessed of, go into the house of such a celebrated beauty as Camilla; for although his virtue and honour might be a sufficient check to the most malevolent tongue, he would not expose his own character, or that of his friend, to the smallest censure; and therefore employed the greatest part of those days on which he had agreed to visit Anselmo, in such things as he pretended were indispensable: so that when they were present, a great deal of time was consumed by the complaints of the one, and excuses of the other. One day, however, as they were walking through a meadow, near the suburbs of the city, Anselmo addressed himself to Lothario in these terms:

"You believe, my friend Lothario, that I can never be thankful enough to heaven for the blessings I enjoy, not only in the most indulgent parents, and in the abundance of those things which are called the goods of nature and fortune; but also in a friend like you, and a wife like Camilla; two pledges which I esteem, if not as highly as I ought, at least as much as I can. Yet, though I possess all those benefits which usually constitute the happiness of mankind, I find myself one of the most disgusted and discontented men alive. I have been for these many days so harassed and fatigued with such an odd unaccountable desire, that I cannot help being amazed at my infatuation,

ation, for which I often blame and rebuke myself, endeavouring to suppress and conceal it from my own reflection: but I find it is impossible to keep the secret, as if I had industriously published it to the whole world; and since it must actually be disclosed to some body, I would have it deposited in the most secret archives of your heart; in full confidence, that by the diligence which you, as a trusty friend, will exert in my behalf when you know it, I shall soon see myself delivered from that anxiety to which it hath reduced me; and by your assiduity be raised to a pitch of joy, equal to the degree of vexation which my own folly hath entailed upon me."

Lothario was astonished at this discourse of Anselmo, as he could not comprehend the meaning of such a long preface and preamble; and endeavoured, by revolving every thing in his imagination, to find out what this desire could be, that preyed so much upon the spirits of his friend; but finding himself always wide of the mark, he was willing to ease himself immediately of the excessive pain his suspense occasioned: and with this view, told Anselmo, that he did a manifest injury to the warmth of his friendship, in going about the bush, seeking indirect methods to impart his most secret thoughts, since he was well assured, that he might entirely depend upon him either for advice to suppress, or assistance to support them. "I am well convinced of the truth of what you say, answered Anselmo; and in that confidence will tell you, my friend, that the desire with which I am possessed, is to be certain, whether or not my wife Camilla is as virtuous and perfect as I believe her to be: and this truth I shall never be fully persuaded of, until the perfection of her nature appear upon trial, as pure gold is proved by fire: for it is my opinion, that there is no woman virtuous, but in proportion to the solicitation she hath withstood; and that she only is chaste,

chaste
tears,
And
chaste
what
who
tions,
put h
When
esteem
of opp
ed o
and n
enforc
may
import
accom
if she
trial,
shall t
and th
man fa
contrar
faction
to bea
prove f
nothing
mine, c
expect
confe
this wo
opportu
necessar
and dis
things
is the c
overcom
VOL.

chaste, who hath not yielded to the promises, presents, tears, and continual importunities of persevering lovers. And pray, where is the merit of a woman's being chaste, when nobody ever courted her to be otherwise? what wonder, that she should be reserved and cautious, who has no opportunity of indulging loose inclinations, and who knows her husband would immediately put her to death, should he once catch her tripping? Wherefore, I can never entertain the same degree of esteem for a woman who is chaste out of fear, or want of opportunity, as I would for her who hath triumphed over perseverance of solicitation: so that, for these and many other reasons I could urge, to sanction and enforce my opinion, I desire that my wife Camilla may undergo the test, and be refined in the fire of importunate addresses, by one possessed of sufficient accomplishments to inspire a woman with love; and, if she comes off, as I believe she will, victorious in the trial, I shall think my own happiness unparalleled. I shall then be able to say, that my wishes are fulfilled; and that she hath fallen to my lot, of whom the wise man saith, "Who hath found her?" And even, if the contrary of what I expect should happen, the satisfaction of seeing my opinion confirmed, will help me to bear with patience that which would otherwise prove such a costly experiment. Supposing then, that nothing you can say, in opposition to this desire of mine, can avail in diverting me from my purpose, I expect and intreat that you, my friend Lothario, will condescend to be the instrument with which I execute this work of my inclination. I will give you proper opportunities, and supply you with every thing I see necessary for soliciting a woman of virtue, honour, and disinterested reserve: and what, among other things induces me to intrust you with this enterprize, is the consideration, that should Camilla's scruples be overcome, you will not pursue your conquest to the

last circumstance of rigour, but only suppose that done, which, for good reason, ought to remain undone; so that I shall be injured by her inclination alone, and my wrongs lie buried in the virtue of your silence, which, I know, in whatever concerns my welfare, will be eternal as that of death. Wherefore, if you would have me enjoy what deserves to be called life, you will forthwith undertake this amorous contest, not with lukewarmness and languor, but with that eagerness and diligence which corresponds with my wish, and the confidence in which I am secured by your friendship."

Such was the discourse of Anselmo, to which Lothario listened so attentively, that, except what he is already said to have uttered, he did not open his lips, until his friend had finished his proposal; but finding he had nothing more to alledge, after having, for some time, gazed upon him as an object hitherto unseen, that inspired him with astonishment and surprize; "I cannot be persuaded, Anselmo, said he, but what you have said was spoke in jest; for had I thought you in earnest, I should not have suffered you to proceed so far, but, by refusing to listen, have prevented such a long harangue. Without doubt, you must either mistake my disposition, or I be utterly unacquainted with yours; and yet I know you to be Anselmo, and you must be sensible that I am Lothario: the misfortune is, I no longer find you the same Anselmo you wont to be, nor do I appear to you the same Lothario as before; your discourse favours not of that Anselmo who was my friend; nor is what you ask, a thing to be demanded of that Lothario who shared your confidence. Good men, as a certain poet observes, may try and avail themselves of their friends, *Usque ad aras*: I mean, not presume upon their friendship, in things contrary to the decrees of Heaven. Now, if a heathen entertained such ideas of friendship, how much more should they be cherished by a christian, who knows,

Knows, that no human affection ought to interfere with our love to God: and when a person stretches his connections so far as to lay aside all respect for heaven, in order to manifest his regard for a friend, he ought not to be swayed by trifles or matters of small consequence, but by those things only on which the life and honour of a friend depend. Tell me then, Anselmo, which of these is in danger, before I venture to gratify your wish, by complying with the detestable proposal you have made? Surely, neither: on the contrary, if I conceive you right, you are desirous, that I should indefatigably endeavour to deprive you and myself also of that very life and honour, which it is my duty to preserve: for if I rob you of honour, I rob you of life; since a man without honour is worse than dead: and I being the instrument, as you desire I should be, that entails such a curse upon you; shall not I be dishonoured, and, of consequence, dead to all enjoyment and fame. Listen, with patience, my friend Anselmo, and make no answer, until I shall have done with imparting the suggestions of my mind, concerning the strange proposal you have made, for there will be time enough for you to reply, and me to listen in my turn." "With all my heart, cried Anselmo; you may speak as long as you please."

Accordingly, Lothario proceeded, saying, "In my opinion, Anselmo, your disposition is at present like that of the Moors, who will not suffer themselves to be convicted of the errors of their sect, by quotations from the holy scripture, nor with arguments founded on speculation, or the articles of faith; but must be confuted or convinced by examples that are palpable, easy, familiar, and subject to the certainty of mathematical demonstration: for instance, if from equal parts we take equal parts, those that remain are equal. And if they do not understand this proposition verbally,

bally, as is frequently the case, it must be explained and set before their eyes by manual operation, which is also sufficient to persuade them of the truth of our holy religion. The self-same method must I practise with you, whose desire deviates so far from every thing that bears the least shadow of reason, that I should look upon it as time mispent, to endeavour to convince you of your folly, which is the only name your intention seems to deserve. Nay, I am even tempted to leave you in your extravagancy, as a punishment for your preposterous desire: but, I am prevented from using such rigour by my friendship, which will not permit me to desert you in such manifest danger of perdition. But to make this affair still more plain, tell me, Anselmo, did not you desire me to solicit one that was reserved, seduce one that was chaste, make presents to one that was disinterested, and assiduously court one that was wise? Yes, such was your demand. If you are apprised, then, of the reserve, virtue, disinterestedness, and prudence of your wife, pray, what is your aim? If you believe that she will triumph over all my assaults, as undoubtedly she will, what fairer titles can you bestow upon her, than those she possesses already? or how will she be more perfect after that trial, than she is at present? You either do not believe she is so virtuous as you have represented her, or know not the nature of your demand. If you think she is not so chaste as you have described her, you should not hazard the trial, but rather, according to the dictates of your own prudence, treat her as a vicious woman: if you are satisfied of her virtue, it would be altogether impertinent to make trial of that truth, which, from the test, can acquire no additional esteem. From whence we may reasonably conclude, that for men to execute designs which are clearly productive of more hurt than benefit, is the province of madness and temerity; especially, when they are not incited

er compelled to these designs by any sort of consideration; but, on the contrary, may, at a greater distance, perceive the manifest madness of their intention. Difficulties are undertaken, either for the sake of God, of this world, or of both. The first are incurred by holy men, who live the life of angels here on earth; the second, by those who traverse the boundless ocean, visiting such a diversity of climates and nations, with a view of acquiring what are called the goods of fortune: and such undertakings as equally regard God and man, fall to the share of those valiant soldiers, who no sooner behold, in the wall of an adverse city, a breach, though no bigger than that which is made by a single cannon-ball, than laying aside all fear, and overlooking with unconcern the manifest danger that menaces them, winged with desire of signalizing their valour in behalf of their king, country, and religion, throw themselves, with the utmost intrepidity, into the midst of a thousand deaths that oppose and await them. These are the enterprizes which are generally undertaken, and, though full of peril and inconvenience, attended with glory, honour, and advantage; but that which you have planned, and purpose to put in execution, neither tends to your acquiring the approbation of God, the goods of fortune, nor the applause of mankind: for, granting that the experiment should succeed to your wish, it will make you neither more happy, rich, or respected than you are; and should it turn out contrary to your expectation, you will find yourself the most miserable of all mortals. It will then give you little ease to reflect, that your misfortune is unknown: for the bare knowing it yourself, will be sufficient to plunge you in affliction and despair. As a confirmation of this truth, you must give me leave to repeat the following stanza, written by the celebrated poet Lewis Tansillo, at the end of the first part of the tears of St Peter.

When Peter saw the approach of rosy morn,
 His soul with sorrow and remorse was torn;
 For, though from every mortal eye conceal'd,
 The guilt to his own bosom stood reveal'd:
 The candid breast will, self-accusing, own
 Each conscious fault, tho' to the world unknown:
 Nor will th' offender 'scape internal shame,
 Tho' unimpeach'd by justice or by fame.

Wherefore, secrecy will never assuage your grief; but, on the contrary, you will incessantly weep, not tears from your eyes, but drops of blood from your heart, like that simple doctor, whom our * poet mentions, who made trial of the vessel, which the prudent Rinaldo, with more discretion, refused to touch: and although this be a poetical fiction, it nevertheless contains a well-couched moral, worthy of notice, study, and imitation; especially, as what I am going to say will, I hope, bring you to a due sense of the great error you want to commit.

Tell me, Anselmo, if heaven or good fortune had made you master and lawful possessor of an exquisite diamond, the brilliancy of which was admired by all the lapidaries who had seen it, and unanimously allowed to be the most perfect of its kind; an opinion, which, as you knew nothing to the contrary, was exactly conformable to your own; would it be wise or pardonable in you, to put that jewel betwixt an anvil and a hammer, and by mere dint of blows, and

* Ludovico Ariosto, author of *Orlando Furioso*, to which poem Cervantes frequently alludes. Here, however, he seems to have forgot the passage he meant to cite: for the person who proffered the cup to Rinaldo, was no doctor. In Canto 43, of the *Orlando Furioso*, mention is made indeed of one Anselmo, who was a doctor of law; but not at all concerned in the enchanted cup: yet it must be owned, that Dr Anselmo had recourse to an astrologer, in order to know whether his wife preserved her chastity in his absence.

Strength

strength of arm, try if it was as hard and perfect as it had been pronounced? for, supposing that the diamond should resist the force of this foolish experiment, it would thereby acquire no addition of value or fame; and if it should be broke to pieces, a thing that might easily happen, would not all be lost? Yes, for certain; and the owner be universally deemed a fool. Consider then, my friend, that Camilla is an exquisite diamond, not only in your estimation, but in that of every one who knows her, and it would be highly unreasonable to expose her to the least possibility of being broke; for, even should she remain entire, her reputation will receive no increase; but should she fail in the trial, reflect upon what you must feel, and the reason you will then have to complain of yourself, for having been the fatal cause of her perdition and your own despair. Consider, that no jewel upon earth is comparable to a woman of virtue and honour; and that the honour of the sex consists in the fair character they maintain. Since, therefore, the reputation of your wife is already as high as it possibly can be, why would you bring this truth into question? Remember, my friend, that woman is an imperfect creature; and that far from laying blocks in her way, over which she might stumble and fall, we ought to remove them with care, and clear her paths from all obstructions, that she may, without trouble, proceed smoothly in attaining to that perfection which she may still want, namely, immaculate virtue. We are informed by naturalists, that the ermin is a little animal, covered with a fur of excessive whiteness, and that the hunters use this artifice to catch it: being well acquainted with the places through which it chuses to pass in its flight, they daub them all over with mud, and as soon as they get sight of the creature, drive it directly thither. The ermin, finding itself thus barricadoed, stands still, and is taken; chusing captivity, rather than
by

by passing through the filth, to stain and sully the whiteness of its fur, which it prizes above liberty, and even life itself. A chaste and virtuous wife is like the ermin, her character being more pure and white than drifted snow; but he, who would guard and preserve it, must use a method quite different from that which is practised upon the little animal, and beware of clogging her way with the mud of entertainments, and the addresses of importunate lovers; lest, perhaps, nay, without a perhaps, she should not possess such virtue and resolution as are sufficient of themselves to surmount those obstructions. It is therefore necessary to remove them, and place before her the purity of virtue, and the beauty of an unblemished reputation. A virtuous woman, also resembles a bright transparent mirror, which is liable to be stained and obscured by the breath of those who approach too near it. A virtuous woman, like reliques, ought to be adored at a distance. She ought to be preserved and esteemed as a beautiful garden full of flowers and roses, the owner of which will suffer nobody to handle them or pass through it, permitting them only to enjoy its fragrance and beauty afar off, through the iron rails that surround it. In fine, I will repeat a few verses that I just now recollect, from a modern comedy, because they seem to have been composed upon the very subject of our present discourse. A sage old man advising his friend, who is blessed with an handsome daughter, to lock her up, and watch over her with the utmost vigilance and care, among other reasons, cautions him with these:

I.

WOMAN is form'd of brittle ware;
Then, wherefore rashly seek to know

What

What force, unbroken she will bear,
And strike, perhaps, some fatal blow ?

II.

Though easily to fragments tore,
'Twere equally absurd and vain,
To dash in pieces on the floor,
What never can be join'd again.

III.

This maxim, then, by facts assur'd,
Should henceforth be espous'd by all ;
Where'er a Danae lies immur'd,
The tempting show'r of gold will fall.

All that I have hitherto suggested, Anselmo, regards yourself; and now it is but reasonable you should hear something that concerns me; and if I should be prolix in my observations, you must excuse me, because it is absolutely necessary to expatiate on the subject, in order to extricate you from the labyrinth in which you are involved, and from which you desire to be disengaged by my assistance. You consider me as a friend, and yet seek to deprive me of my honour; a desire opposite to all friendship or regard; nay, even endeavour to make me rob you of your own. That you want to destroy mine, is plain; for Camilla, finding herself exposed to my solicitations, as you desire, will certainly look upon me as a man void of all principle and honour; because I attempt to succeed in a design so contrary to the dignity of my own character, and the friendship subsisting between us. That you desire I should rob you of yours, is not to be doubted; because Camilla, seeing herself importuned by my addresses, will think I must have observed some levity in her conduct, which hath encouraged me to disclose my vicious inclination, and think herself dishonoured accordingly; so that you will be as much concerned in her dishonour as if it was your own.

Hence

Hence springs the common observation, that the husband of a lewd woman, though he neither knows, nor hath given the least occasion for the misconduct of his wife; and though his misfortune was neither owing to his want of prudence or care, is notwithstanding pointed at, and distinguished by a name of scandal and reproach; being looked upon, by those who know the frailty of his wife, with an eye of disdain, instead of compassion, which he certainly deserves, as his disgrace proceeds not from any fault of his, but from the loose inclinations of his worthless spouse. I will now explain the reason, why the husband of a bad woman is justly dishonoured, though he neither knows, nor hath been in any shape accessory to her backslidings; and you must hear me with patience, because my remarks will, I hope, redound to your own advantage.

When God created our first parent in the terrestrial paradise, we are told by the holy scripture, that he was thrown into a deep sleep, during which the Almighty took a rib from his left side; and of this Eve being formed, Adam no sooner awoke and beheld her, than he cried, "This creature is flesh of my flesh, and bone of my bone." Nay, God himself pronounced, "For this shall a man leave father and mother, and they two shall be one flesh." Then was instituted the divine sacrament of marriage, consisting of such ties as death alone can unbind; and endowed with such miraculous virtue and power, as to unite two different persons in one flesh; nay, what is still more wonderful, to combine two souls, so as to produce but one will; provided the union be happily effected. From hence it follows, that the flesh of the wife being the same with that of the husband, whatever stains or blemishes are imbibed by the first, must equally affect the other, although, as I have already observed, he is in no manner accessory to the misfortune. Wherefore, as the whole person is affected by the pain of the foot, or any other member

of the
concern
angle, w
being a
his wife
graces o
infamy
must be
ed upon
terly ign
selmo, c
by seeki
virtuous
rence of
and stir
quiet in
that, in
small, b
unmenti
mation.
ficient t
I desire
misfortu
office, th
friendshi
earth."

Here
speaking
perplexi
one wor
ing, "I
may hav
had to f
compari
great dif
ship to w
that in r

of the human body ; and the head, though no way concerned in the cause, be a fellow-sufferer with the ankle, when it is hurt ; by the same rule, an husband, being a part of the same whole, must bear a share of his wife's dishonour ; for, as all the honours and disgraces of this life proceed from flesh and blood, the infamy of a vicious woman, being of the same origin, must be shared by her husband, who ought to be looked upon as a dishonoured person, though he be utterly ignorant of the guilt. Reflect, therefore, Anselmo, on the danger into which you bring yourself, by seeking to disturb the peace and tranquillity of your virtuous wife. Reflect upon the vanity and impertinence of that curiosity which prompts you to awaken and stir up those humours, that now lie tamed and quiet in the bosom of your chaste spouse. Consider that, in this rash adventure, your gain must be very small, but your loss may be so great, that I leave it unmentioned, because I want words to express its estimation. On the whole, if what I have said be insufficient to divert you from your mischievous design, I desire you will chuse some other instrument of your misfortune and disgrace ; for I will not undertake the office, though, by my refusal, I should even lose your friendship, which is dearer to me than any thing upon earth."

Here the virtuous and prudent Lothario left off speaking, and Anselmo remained in such confusion and perplexity, that, for some time, he could not answer one word : at length, however, he broke silence, saying, " I have listened, my friend Lothario, as you may have perceived, with great attention to all you had to say ; and by your arguments, examples, and comparisons, am fully convinced, not only of your great discretion, but also of that perfection of friendship to which you have attained ; I see also, and own, that in refusing your counsel, and following my own,
I avoid

I avoid the good and pursue the evil. This truth being acknowledged, you must consider me as a person afflicted with that infirmity, which induces some women to swallow earth, chalk, coals, and other things of a worse nature, which if loathsome to the sight, how much more disagreeable must they be to the taste. Wherefore, there is an absolute necessity for using some method of cure, which you may easily effect, by beginning to solicit the love of Camilla, though coldly and feignedly; and sure, she cannot be so frail as to surrender her virtue at the first encounter. With this slight attempt I shall rest satisfied, and you fulfil the duty of friendship, not only in giving me new life, but also in dissuading me from being the cause of my own dishonour. Nay, you are obliged to comply with my request by this other consideration, that, determined as I am to put my design in execution, you ought not to allow me to communicate this extravagant resolution to any other person, lest I run the risk of losing that honour which you endeavour to preserve; and as to your suffering in the opinion of Camilla, by tempting to seduce her, that is a reflection of small importance, because, when her integrity is proved, you can soon inform her of our whole contrivance; consequently, regain and repossess the former place you held in her esteem. Since therefore, by adventuring so little, it is in your power to give me so much satisfaction, I hope you will not refuse the office, even if it was attended with more inconvenience; for I have already told you, that I shall look upon the affair as concluded, whenever you shall have made the first attempt."

Lothario seeing him fixed in his resolution, even after he had exhausted all his rhetoric to dissuade him from it; and fearing he would execute his threat of imparting his unhappy design to some other person, determined to prevent a greater misfortune, by complying

plyi
nag
sel
Wit
no o
man
and
frien
him
him
them
next
port
speak
mon
prom
temp
or, if
he hi
tunc
ent i
agree
this l
anxiet
longer
home
as him
for br
might
witho
Nex
very k
with
panion
drawn
with C
of busi
VOL

plying with his desire ; purposing, however, to manage the business in such a manner, as to satisfy Anselmo, without altering the sentiments of his wife. With this view, he told Anselmo, that he should have no occasion to communicate his intention to any other man ; for he, Lothario, would undertake the affair, and begin when he pleased. Anselmo, embracing his friend with great tenderness and affection, thanked him as much for his compliance, as if he had granted him some vast favour ; and it was concerted between them, that Lothario should begin the enterprize the very next day, when Anselmo would give him time and opportunity of being alone with Camilla, that he might speak to her with freedom ; and also supply him with money and jewels, that with such presents he might promote his suit ; he, moreover, advised him to attempt her by music, and write verses in her praise ; or, if that would be too much trouble for the gallant, he himself would compose them for the purpose. Lothario undertook every thing, but with a very different intention from what Anselmo supposed ; and the agreement being made, they returned to the house of this last, where they found Camilla waiting with great anxiety for her husband, who had that day tarried longer than usual abroad. Lothario soon after went home to his own lodgings, leaving his friend as happy as himself was perplexed how to contrive the scheme for bringing this affair to a fortunate issue : but that night he fell upon an expedient to deceive Anselmo, without giving offence to his wife.

Next day he went to dine with his friend, and was very kindly received by Camilla, who entertained him with great cordiality, as her husband's intimate companion. Dinner being ended, and the table withdrawn, Anselmo rising up, desired Lothario to stay with Camilla till his return from an indispensable piece of business that would detain him an hour and an half.

Camilla intreated him to defer it until another time, and Lothario offered to go along with him ; but he was deaf to both, pressing Lothario to let him go, while he should wait at his house till he came back, for he wanted to talk with him upon a subject of the last importance ; at the same time, desiring Camilla to keep Lothario company till his return : in short, he so well feigned the necessity, or rather folly, of his absence, that nobody could have suspected the deceit. He accordingly went out, and left Camilla and his friend by themselves ; for the rest of the family had gone to dinner : so that Lothario seeing himself within the lists, according to Anselmo's desire, with his fair enemy, whose beauty alone was powerful enough to overcome a whole squadron of armed knights, it may be easily conceived what reason he had to fear : yet all he did, was to lean his head on his hand, while his elbow rested upon the arm of the chair in which he sat, and after having begged pardon for his ill manners, to tell Camilla, he would take a nap till Anselmo's return. She said he would be more at his ease in a couch than in the chair, and advised him to walk into a chamber where he would find one. This offer, however, he declined, and slept where he was till the return of his friend, who finding Camilla in her own apartment, and Lothario asleep, concluded, that by his long stay, he had given them time, not only to speak, but also to take their repose ; and was impatient for Lothario's waking, that he might carry him out to walk, and enquire about his own fortune.

Every thing succeeded to his wish : when his friend awoke, they went forth together, and he put every question to him that his curiosity suggested : Lothario answered, that thinking it improper to explain himself, on the first occasion, he had done nothing but praised Camilla's beauty, which, together with her discretion, he told her, engrossed the conversation of

the whole city : this, he imagined, was the most prudent beginning, as it might prepossess her in his favour, and dispose her to listen to him another time with pleasure ; being the same artifice which is practised by the devil, who, when he would seduce those who are on their guard, transforms himself from an imp of darkness into an angel of light, and flattering them with specious appearances, at length discovers his cloven foot, and succeeds in his design, provided his deceit be not detected in the beginning. This declaration was altogether satisfactory to Anselmo, who said, he would give him the same opportunity every day, without quitting the house, in which he would employ himself so artfully, that Camilla should never suspect his design. Many days passed, in which though Lothario never opened his mouth on the subject to Camilla, he told Anselmo that he had made many efforts, but could never perceive in her the least tendency to weakness, or obtain the least shadow of hope ; on the contrary, that she had threatened, if he did not lay aside the wicked design, to disclose the whole affair to her husband. " Very well, said Anselmo, hitherto she is proof against words ; we must now try whether or not she can resist works also : to-morrow you shall have two thousand crowns in gold, for a present to her ; and as much more, to purchase jewels for a bait : These are things with which all beautiful women are captivated ; for, be they ever so chaste, they love finery and gay apparel ; if she withstands that temptation, I will rest satisfied and give you no further trouble."

Lothario promised to go through with the enterprize, now that he had begun, though he was persuaded he should be fatigued and baffled in the execution. Next day he received four thousand crowns, and as many perplexities along with them ; for he did not know what lie he should next invent : however, he

determined to tell his friend, that Camilla was as invincible to presents as to words; and that he should give himself no further vexation, since all his endeavours were thrown away to no purpose: but fortune, which conducted matters in another manner, ordained, that Anselmo, one day, after having, according to custom, left Lothario and his wife by themselves, and gone to his own chamber, should peep through the key-hole, and listen to their conversation: it was then he perceived, that in half an hour and more, Lothario did not speak one word; neither would he have opened his mouth, had he remained a whole age in the same situation. From hence he concluded, that every thing his friend had told him of Camilla's replies was mere fiction; but to be still more assured, he came out of his chamber, and called Lothario aside, asked what news he had, and how Camilla stood affected to him? He replied, That he was resolved to drop the business entirely; for she had checked him with such bitterness and indignation, that he had no mind to return to the charge. "Ah Lothario! Lothario, said Anselmo, how much you have failed in the duty of friendship, and abused the confidence I have reposed in your affection! I have been all this time looking through the key-hole of that door, and perceived that you have not spoken one word to Camilla; from whence I suspect, that your first declaration is yet to come; and if that be the case, as without doubt it is, wherefore have you thus deceived me; and in so doing, prevented me from other means to satisfy my desire?" He said no more, but this was sufficient to cover Lothario with shame and confusion; who thinking his honour concerned, in being convicted of a lie, swore to Anselmo, he would from that moment take the charge of giving him the satisfaction he required, without the least equivocation, as he might perceive, by watching him narrowly; though there

there would be no occasion for using such diligence, because his future behaviour in that affair would acquit him of all suspicion.

Anselmo gave credit to his protestation ; and that his opportunities might be more secure, and less subject to interruption, resolved to absent himself from his own house for eight days, during which he proposed to visit a friend who lived in a village not far from the city ; and whom he desired to invite him to his house with the most earnest entreaties, that he might excuse himself to Camilla for his absence.—Unfortunate and imprudent Anselmo ! what art thou doing ? What art thou contriving and concerting ? Consider that thou art acting against thyself, planning thy own dishonour and perdition. Your wife Camilla is virtuous and sober, and you possess her at present in quiet ; enjoying uninterrupted pleasure : her inclinations never ramble beyond the walls of your own house ; you are her paradise-upon earth, the goal of her desires, the accomplishment of her wishes, and the standard by which she measures her will, adjusting it, in all respects, according to your pleasure and the directions of Heaven. Since the mine of her honour, beauty, modesty and virtue, yields thee, without trouble, all the riches which it contains, or thou canst desire ; why wouldst thou, by digging in search of a new and unheard-of treasure, risk the fall or destruction of the whole, which is sustained by the feeble props of female constancy ? Remember, it is but just, that he who builds on impossibilities, should be denied the privilege of any other foundation ; as the poet hath better expressed it, in the following couplets :

In death, I fought new life to find,
And health where pale distemper pin'd :
I look'd for freedom in the jail,
And faith, where perjuries prevail :

H 3

But

But fate supreme, whose stern decree
To sorrow match'd my destiny,
All possible relief withdrew ;
Because th' impossible I kept in view.

Next day Anselmo went to the country, after having told Camilla, that, in his absence, Lothario would take charge of the family, and dine with her every day ; he therefore desired her to treat him with all the respect due to his own person. Camilla, being a woman of honour and discretion, was disgusted at this order, and bade him consider how unseemly it was for another man to sit at the head of his table in his absence ; at the same time begging, that if his directions proceeded from his diffidence in her capacity, he would for once put her management to the trial, and be convinced, by experience, that she was equal to a more important charge. Anselmo replied, that such was his pleasure, and her province was to bow the head, and obey ; upon which she, though unwillingly, submitted. Next day he set out accordingly, and Lothario went to his house, where he met with a very kind and honourable reception from Camilla, who never gave him an opportunity of being alone with her, but was always surrounded by her servants, generally attended by her own maid, whose name was Leonela, for whom her mistress had a particular affection, because they had been brought up together from their infancy, in the house of Camilla's parents, and when she married Anselmo, she accompanied her to his house in quality of waiting-woman.

During the first three days, Lothario did not declare himself, although he had opportunities immediately after the table was uncovered, while the servants were at dinner, which Camilla always ordered them to finish with all expedition. Nay, she gave directions to Leonela, to dine every day, before the cloth was laid

for herself, that she might always be in waiting ; but her maid's thoughts were too much engrossed by her own amusements, the enjoyment of which required such time and opportunity, as often hindered her from obeying the commands of her mistress ; so that she frequently behaved as if she had received orders to leave them alone.—But the dignified presence of Camilla, the gravity of her countenance, and awfulness of person were such, as effectually bridled Lothario's tongue : yet the energy of virtue, in having this very effect, redounded the more to the disadvantage of them both ; for though his tongue was restricted, his thoughts had a full and a free opportunity of contemplating, at leisure, the charms both of her mind and person, which were sufficient to captivate not only an heart of flesh, but even a statue of stone.

Lothario, by gazing at her during those opportunities, beheld how worthy she was to be beloved ; and this conviction began gradually to sap his regard for his friend ; so that he made a thousand resolutions to quit the city, and go where he should never more be seen by Anselmo, or be exposed to danger from the beauty of his wife : but all these were baffled by the pleasure he had already felt, in seeing and admiring her charms : he constrained himself, and combated his own inclinations, in order to expel and efface that satisfaction ; when he was alone, he condemned his own madness, and reproached himself as a false friend and worthless christian ; he made a thousand reflections and comparisons between himself and Anselmo ; and they all terminated in this conclusion, that the madness and rash confidence of his friend greatly exceeded his own infidelity ; and that, if he could excuse himself to heaven, for what he intended to do, as easily as to mankind, he had no reason to dread any punishment for the crime : in short, the beauty and other accomplishments of Camilla, together with the
 oppor.

opportunity which the ignorant husband put into his hands, entirely overthrew the integrity of Lothario; who giving way at once to the dictates of his passion, began at the end of three days, during which he had been at continual war with his desires, to address himself to Camilla with such disorder, and amorous discourse, that she was utterly astonished, and rising up, went to her own chamber, without answering one word: but this coyness did not abate Lothario's hope, which always increases with a man's love; on the contrary, he redoubled his efforts, while she, perceiving him behave so wide of expectation, did not well know what conduct to espouse: but thinking it would be both unseemly and unsafe in her to grant him another opportunity, she determined that very night to send a message to her husband, and actually dispatched a servant to him with the following letter:

CHAP. VII.

The continuation of the Novel called the Impertinent Curiosity.

"IT is a common observation, that an army without
 " a general, and a garrison without a chief, make but
 " a very indifferent appearance: but, I say, that a
 " young married woman without a husband makes a
 " worse, especially when his absence is not the effect
 " of absolute necessity: for my own part, I find my-
 " self so uneasy, and unable to support our separation,
 " that if you do not return immediately, I must go and
 " pass my time at my father's house; though I should
 " leave your's without a guard; for, I believe, he that
 " you left, if he was designed for that purpose, hath
 " more regard to his own pleasure than to your ad-
 " vantage; and since you are wise, I have nothing
 " more to say, nor is it proper I should."

When

When Anselmo received this letter, he was convinced that Lothario had begun the enterprize, and that his wife had behaved according to his wish; rejoiced beyond measure at this information, he answered by a verbal message, that she should by no means leave the house; for he would return in a very little time. Camilla was astonished at this reply, which perplexed her more than ever: as she durst neither stay in her own house, nor go to her father's; for, in staying at home, she endangered her honour, and in going to her parents, she transgressed the commands of her husband. In fine, she resolved upon that which was worst of all; namely, to remain where she was, determined not to avoid Lothario, that the servants might not observe her situation; and she was already sorry for what she had written to Anselmo, being afraid he would imagine Lothario had perceived some levity in her conduct, which encouraged him to lay aside the decorum he ought to have preserved. Confident of her own virtue, she trusted to God and her conscious prudence, by the help of which she thought she could, in silence, resist all the solicitations of Lothario, without giving her husband any further information, lest it should involve him in some trouble or dangerous dispute: nay, she was even industrious in inventing some excuse for Lothario, in case Anselmo should ask the reason that induced her to write such a letter.

With these sentiments, which were more honourable than prudent and advantageous, she, next day, sat listening to Lothario, who exerted himself in such a manner, as to shake her fortitude, which, with all her virtue, was barely sufficient to hinder her eyes from giving manifest indications of the amorous compassion that his tears and addresses had awakened in her breast. All this tenderness, which Lothario observed, inflamed his passion the more; and thinking there was a necessity for shortening the siege, while
this

this opportunity of Anselmo's absence lasted, he assaulted her pride with the praises of her beauty; for nothing sooner succeeds in overthrowing the embattled towers of female vanity, than vanity itself, employed by the tongue of adulation: in short, he so assiduously undermined the fortress of her virtue, and plied it with such irresistible engines, that tho' she had been made of brass, she must have surrendered at mercy; he wept, intreated, promised, flattered, feigned, and importuned, with such earnest expressions of love, as conquered all her reserve; at last he obtained a complete triumph, which, though what he least expected, was what of all things he most ardently desired: she yielded—the chaste Camilla yielded! But, what wonder! Since even Lothario's friendship gave way. A clear and incontestible proof, that love is to be conquered by flight alone; and that no person whatever ought to engage such a powerful adversary, hand to hand; because nothing but force divine can subdue that human power.

Leonela alone was privy to the weakness of her mistress, which the two new lovers and false friends could not possibly conceal from her knowledge: and Lothario did not chuse to tell Camilla the contrivance of Anselmo, who had given him the opportunity of accomplishing his design, that she might not undervalue his love, by supposing, that he courted her by accident, without being at first really enamoured of her charms. Anselmo, returning in a few days, did not perceive the loss of that which, tho' he preserved with the least care, he prized above all other possessions: but going in quest of Lothario, whom he found in his own lodging, after a mutual embrace, he desired he would tell him the news that must determine his life or death. “The news which I have to give you, my friend, said Lothario, are these: you have a wife who truly deserves to be the pattern and queen

of all
were f
presen
heartil
beauty
affabili
nify a
your m
chastit
mean o
be sati
trials;
doubts
tained
into th
other
tightn
Heave
sider y
to fecu
and re
from v
Ansel
of Lo
had be
he bes
curiosi
garnes
desired
the na
he, Lo
lebrate
the de
him, t
trouble
them f
thario

of all good women. The expressions I used to her were spent in the air ; my promises were despised, my presents rejected, and some tears that I feigned, most heartily ridiculed : in short, Camilla is the sum of all beauty, and the casket in which are deposited honour, affability, modesty, and all the qualifications that dignify and adorn a woman of virtue. Here take back your money, which I have had no occasion to use : the chastity of your spouse is not to be shaken by such mean considerations as those of promises and presents : be satisfied, Anselmo, and make no more unprofitable trials ; since you have dry-shod crossed the sea of those doubts and suspicions, which are and may be entertained of women ; seek not to plunge yourself anew into the dangerous gulf of fresh difficulties, by using another pilot to make a second trial of the strength and tightness of the vessel, which you have received from Heaven to perform the voyage of this life : but consider yourself as in a safe harbour, where you ought to secure yourself with the anchor of sound reflection, and remain until you are called upon to pay that tax from which no human rank can exempt you."

Anselmo was infinitely rejoiced at this information of Lothario, which he believed as implicitly as if it had been pronounced by an oracle : but, nevertheless, he besought him to continue his addresses, merely for curiosity and amusement, tho' not with the same eagerness and diligence which he had used before : he desired him to write verses in praise of Camilla, under the name of Chloris, promising to tell his wife, that he, Lothario, was in love with a lady whom he celebrated under that fictitious name, in order to preserve the decorum due to her character ; and he assured him, that if Lothario did not choose to take the trouble of making verses, he himself would compose them for the occasion " You shall not need, said Lothario ; the muses are not quite so averse, but they visit

visit me sometimes: you may tell Camilla what you have mentioned, concerning my pretended love; and as for the verses, if not adequate to the subject, they shall, at all events, be the best I can make."

This agreement being concerted between the impetuous husband and treacherous friend, Anselmo returned to his own house, and asked Camilla what she wondered he had not mentioned before; namely, the meaning of that letter which she had dispatched to him in the country. She answered, that she then fancied Lothario looked at her with more freedom than he used to take when Anselmo was at home; but now she was undeceived, and convinced of its being no more than mere imagination; for he had of late avoided all occasions of being alone with her. Anselmo said, she might make herself entirely easy from that quarter; for he knew that Lothario was in love with a lady of fashion in the city, whom he celebrated under the name of Chloris; and even if he was free of any such engagements, there was nothing to be feared from the honour of Lothario, and the friendship subsisting between them. If Camilla had not been previously advertised by her secret gallant of this supposed love of Chloris, with which he intended to hoodwink her husband, that he might sometimes indulge himself in her own praise, under the cover of that name; she would, without doubt, have been distracted with jealousy, but, thus instructed, she heard him without surprize or concern.

Next day, while they were at dinner, Anselmo intreated his friend to repeat some of the verses he had composed in praise of Chloris, who being utterly unknown to Camilla, he might securely say what he pleased: "Tho' she were of her acquaintance, answered Lothario, I should not think myself bound to conceal my passion; for when a lover praises the beauty, and at the same time bewails the cruelty of his mistress,

her

The
to by h
observe
could re
said Ca
die poe
bearie
truth;
the hear
Anselmo
tion to I
la, whose
now equ
therefore
mew tha
Vol. I

her reputation can suffer no prejudice : but be that as it will, I own, I yesterday wrote a song on the ingratitude of Chloris, which you shall hear.

I.

WHEN night extends her silent reign,
And sleep vouchsafes the world to bliss,
To heav'n and Chloris I complain
Of dire and affluent distress.

II.

When Phœbus, led by rosy morn,
At first, his radiant visage shews,
With tears, and sighs, and groans, forlorn,
My soul the bitter plaint renews.

III.

When from his bright meridian throne,
The dazzling rays descend amain,
With aggravated grief I moan,
And night brings back the woeful strain.
Thus to my vows and pray'rs, I find
My Chloris deaf, and heav'n unkind.

The song was approved by Camilla, and much more so by her husband, who applauded it to the skies, and observed, that the lady must be excessively cruel who could resist such a true and pathetic complaint. "What! said Camilla, is every thing true that we are told by the poets when they are in love?" "What they rehearse as poets, answered Lothario, is not always truth; but what they affirm as lovers, is always from the heart." "You are certainly in the right," replied Anselmo, with a view of supporting and giving sanction to Lothario's sentiments in the opinion of Camilla, whose indifference about her husband's artifice was now equal to her love for his pretended friend. Pleased therefore, with his performances, because she very well knew that his inclinations and compositions were in-

pired by, and addressed to her, who was the true Chloris, she desired him, if he had any more songs or verses, to repeat them. "I have another, said Lothario, but, I believe, it is not so good; or rather, it is less tolerable than the last. However, you shall judge for yourself—here it is.

I.

YES, cruel maid! I welcome death,
And tho' I perish undeplor'd,
Thy beauty, with my latest breath,
Shall be applauded and ador'd.

II.

Tho' lost in dark oblivion's shade,
Bereft of favour, life and fame,
My faithful heart, when open laid,
Will shew thy image and thy name.

III.

These reliques I preserve with care,
My comfort in disastrous fate;
For, steel'd and whetted by despair,
My love new force acquires from hate,
Unhappy those! who, darkling, sail
Where stars and ports and pilots fail.

This song was commended as much as the first, by Anselmo, who in this manner added link to link of the chain with which he enslaved himself, and secured his own dishonour; for then Lothario disgraced him most, when he thought himself most honoured, and every step that Camilla descended towards the very centre of contempt, she, in the opinion of her husband, mounted to the very summit of virtuous reputation. About this time, happening to be alone with her maid, "I am ashamed, dear Leonela, said she, when I consider how I have undervalued myself; for I ought to have made Lothario employ a great deal of

time

time in purchasing the entire possession of my favours, which I so willingly surrendered at once; and I am afraid that he will look upon my sudden yielding as the effect of levity, without reflecting upon the violence of his own addresses, which it was impossible to resist." "Let not that give you the least disturbance, madam, answered Leonela; for there is no reason why a thing should lose its estimation, by being freely given, if it is actually good in its kind and worthy of esteem; nay, it is a common saying, that he who gives freely, gives twice." "There is also another common observation, replied Camilla, that which is easily got, is little valued." "You are not at all affected by that observation, resumed Leonela; for love (they say) sometimes flies, sometimes walks, runs with one, creeps with another, warms a third, burns a fourth, wounding some, and slaying others. In one moment it begins, performs, and concludes its career; lays siege in the morning to a fortress, which is surrendered before night, there being no fortresses that can withstand its power. This being the case, what cause have you to be alarmed or afraid? this was the power that assisted Lothario, by making use of my master's absence as the instrument of his success; and what love had determined, must of necessity have been concluded during that period, before Anselmo could, by his return, prevent the perfection of the work. Opportunity is the best minister for executing the designs of love; and is employed in all his undertakings, especially in the beginning of them. This I know to be true, more by experience than hearsay; and I shall one day tell you, madam, that I am a girl of flesh and blood, as well as your ladyship. Besides, your ladyship did not yield until you had discerned in the looks, sighs, protestations, promises, and presents of Lothario, his whole soul undisguised, and adorned with such virtues, as rendered him worthy of your love. Let not

therefore these scrupulous and whining reflections harass your imagination; but assure yourself, that Lethario's love and yours are mutual: so that you may think yourself extremely happy, in being caught in the amorous snare by a man of worth and honour, who not only possesses the four qualities beginning with * S, which ought to be the case of all true lovers, but also a whole alphabet of accomplishments. Listen, and you shall hear how cleverly I will recount them. He is, in my simple opinion, amiable, benevolent, courageous, diverting, enamoured, firm, gay, honourable, illustrious, loyal, mettlesome, noble, obedient, princely, qualified, rich, and the S. S. as I have already observed. Then, he is trusty, vigilant, the X does not suit him, because it is a harsh letter; Y stands for youth, and Z for zeal, in his attachment to you."

Camilla laughed at the alphabet of her maid, whom she found more knowing in the affairs of love than she had pretended to be; and this knowledge indeed she confessed, disclosing to her mistress an intrigue that she carried on with a young man of a good family in town. Camilla was disturbed at this information, fearing that her honour ran some risk from their correspondence; and when she pressed her to confess, whether or not it had been brought to the last extremity, she, without the least symptom of shame answered in the affirmative: for it is very certain, that the failings of mistresses divest their servants of all modesty; because, seeing their ladies trip, they think themselves entitled to halt, without being at the trouble to conceal their defect. Camilla, thus circumstanced, could fall upon no other expedient than that of cautioning her maid against betraying her to the person who was her gallant, and beseeching her to keep her own in-

* Sensato, Secreto, Sobrepusado, Senzero---Sensible, secret, surpassing, and sincere.

trigue

trigue secret, that it might not fall under the observation of Anselmo and Lothario.

Leonela promised to be upon her guard; but managed her affairs with so little discretion, that she confirmed Camilla in the apprehension of losing her reputation by the carelessness of her maid; for the bold and immodest Leonela, seeing that her lady's conduct was not the same as formerly, had the assurance to introduce and conceal her lover in the house, conscious, that although her mistress should perceive, she durst not detect him, in that situation. Among other disadvantages incurred by the slips of women of fashion, they become slaves to their own servants, and find themselves obliged to connive at their impudence and vice.

This was the very case of Camilla, who, though she more than once observed Leonela engaged with her gallant, in one of the chambers, far from reprimanding her on that score, she gave opportunities of concealing him, and did all she could to prevent his being seen by her husband. But all their caution could not screen him from the notice of Lothario, who, perceiving him come out of the house one morning at break of day, and not knowing who he was, at first mistook him for a phantom; but, seeing him run away, and seek to hide himself, with care and concern, he soon changed that simple opinion for another, which would have ruined them all, had not Camilla found out an expedient to prevent their destruction. He was so far from thinking that this man, whom he saw coming out of Anselmo's house at such an unreasonable hour, had gone in on Leonela's account, that he did not even remember there was such a person in the world; on the contrary, he was firmly persuaded, that Camilla, who yielded so easily to his addresses, had acted in the same manner to some other person: for this additional misfortune attends a loose

woman, that she loses her credit even with the man by whose importunities and intreaties her honour was subdued: nay, he believes that she will be more easily won by another than by him, and implicitly credits every suspicion that may arise from that unjust inference. On this occasion, Lothario's good sense failed, and all his caution seemed to vanish; since, regardless of every thing that was right or reasonable, without further examination, he hied him to Anselmo before he was up, where, impatient and blind with the jealous fury that preyed upon his entrails, and inflamed with the desire of being revenged upon Camilla, who had given him no offence, he expressed himself thus:

"You must know, Anselmo, that for some days past I have had a continual struggle with myself, endeavouring to suppress that which I no longer either can or ought to conceal from your knowledge. The fortress of Camilla is at last surrendered, and submitted entirely to the dominion of my will. This I have delayed imparting to you, until I should be certain, whether her compliance was owing to some transient flash of affection, or to the desire of trying the sincerity of those addresses which, by your own direction, were carried on: and I likewise concluded, that if she was a woman of honour and virtue, as we both imagined, she would, ere now, have given you an account of my solicitation. But, finding that still undone, I take it for granted, she means to keep her promise of giving me an interview in the wardrobe, the very next time you go to the country: (and here it was that Camilla actually used to entertain him) but I should not wish that you would run precipitately into any scheme of vengeance. However, as the crime is committed in thought only, before an opportunity offers of performing that promise, Camilla may change her mind, and repent of her weakness. Wherefore, as you have hitherto, in whole or in part, followed my advice,

advice, I hope you will treasure up and observe one which I shall now offer, that you may, without the least possibility of being deceived, carefully and cautiously satisfy yourself, so as to take such measures as your prudence shall suggest. You may pretend that you are going, as usual, for two or three days to the country, and in the mean time, conceal yourself in the wardrobe, where you will find tapestry and plenty of other things for the purpose: from thence you, with your own eyes, as I with mine, will observe the conduct of Camilla, and if unhappily you should find more cause to fear than to hope, you may, in person, revenge your own wrongs, with silence, safety, and discretion."

Anselmo was thunderstruck at this declaration of Lothario, which came upon him when he least expected it; for he already looked upon Camilla as a conqueror in the fictitious assaults of his friend, and had actually begun to enjoy the glory of her triumph. After having stood silent for a long time, with his eyes fixed upon the ground, "Lothario, said he, you have acted up to the expectation of my friendship: I will adhere to your advice in every thing: do what you please; I hope you will keep this unexpected affair as secret as the nature of it requires."

His false friend promised to observe the caution: but soon as he quitted the apartment, repented of every thing he had said, reflecting how foolishly he had proceeded, and that he might have punished Camilla by means less cruel and dishonourable. He cursed his own folly, condemned his precipitation, and endeavoured to find out some expedient to undo what he had done, or at least bring it to some favourable issue. At length, he resolved to disclose the whole to Camilla, as there wanted not opportunities of being with her alone; and that very day, being together, she made use of the first that happened, addressing herself to him in this manner: "Know, my dear Lothario, that
my

my heart is ready to burst with one affliction, which is so grievous, that it will be a wonder if I survive it : Leonela is arrived to such a pitch of impudence, that every night she introduces a gallant into the house, and remains with him till morning, very much at the expence of my reputation, as the field is left open for any malicious construction, upon seeing a man come out of my house at such unseasonable hours : and the misfortune is, I dare neither chide nor chastise her for her audacity ; for her being privy to our correspondence puts a bridal in my mouth, obliging me to be silent on the subject of her folly ; from which, I fear, some mischance will befall us."

When Camilla began this discourse, Lothario imagined it was an artifice to deceive and persuade him, that the man he had seen coming out of the house had been there on Leonela's account only ; but seeing his mistress weep, and in the utmost affliction intreat him to find out some remedy for this inconvenience, he was convinced of the truth, and covered with shame and remorse for what he had done : nevertheless, he desired Camilla to make herself easy, and promised to fall upon some method to curb Leonela's insolence. He then told her what, instigated by the rage of jealousy, he had disclosed to Anselmo, who, by his appointment, was to conceal himself in the wardrobe, that he might have an incontestible proof of her infidelity : he begged pardon for his madness, with advice how to remedy it, and to extricate himself from the labyrinth in which he was involved by his own imprudence. Camilla was astonished at the discourse of Lothario, whom she chide and reprimanded with great reason and resentment, for the groundless suspicion which had driven him to such a mad and mischievous resolution. But, women have naturally more invention than man can boast of, either for a good or
bad

bad occasion, though sometimes they fail in premeditated schemes; Camilla instantly thought of a cure for this seemingly incurable dilemma, and bade Lothario prevail upon her husband to conceal himself in the appointed place the very next day; for she hoped to reap such advantage from his concealment, as that, for the future, they should enjoy each other without the least fear or interruption. She, therefore, without disclosing to her lover the whole of her plan, desired him to take care, when Anselmo was hid, to come at Leonela's call, and answer every question she should ask, in the same manner as he would reply, if he did not know that her husband was within hearing. Lothario insisted upon knowing the particulars of her scheme, that he might with more security and success perform his cue; but Camilla assured him, he had nothing to do but answer her questions with truth and sincerity; being unwilling to make him previously acquainted with her design, lest he should disapprove of that which to her seemed so necessary, and recommend another, which perhaps she might not think so effectual. Accordingly, Lothario took his leave; and next day, Anselmo, under pretence of going to his friend's country-house, set out, but soon returned to his hiding-place; Camilla and her maid having purposely given him an opportunity of getting in unseen. There he remained in a state of perturbation, which may be easily conceived to harass the breast of a man who expected to see, with his own eyes, the bowels of his honour dissected, and found himself on the brink of losing that supreme bliss which he thought he possessed in his beloved Camilla.

She and her maid, by this time, certified of his being there, went to the wardrobe, which Camilla no sooner entered, than heaving a profound sigh, "Dear Leonela, said she, rather than execute the design which I conceal from your knowledge, that you may not endeavour

deavour to prevent it, would it not be better for you to take this poignard of Anselmo, and plunge it in my unfortunate bosom? Yet, do not, Leonela; for it were unreasonable, that I should be punished for another's crime; I want, first, to know what the daring and suspicious eyes of Lothario have discerned in my conduct, that should encourage him to declare a passion so guilty as that which he hath owned so much to my dishonour and the prejudice of his friend. Go to that window, Leonela, and beckon to him, for, doubtless, he is now in the street, expecting to succeed in his wicked intention: But I shall first execute mine, which is equally honourable and severe." "Alas, madam! answered the cunning and well-instructed Leonela, how do you intend to use that fatal poignard? are you determined to take away your own life, or that of Lothario? by sacrificing either the one or the other, you will entirely ruin your own reputation. You should rather stifle your wrongs, than give that wicked wretch an opportunity of finding us here alone: consider, madam, that we are but weak women, and he a determined man, who, blinded by his guilty passion, may by force deprive you of that which you value more than life, before you can execute your purpose upon him. A plague upon my master Anselmo, for allowing that impudent fellow to be so free in his house! besides, madam, should you kill him, as I believe you intend to do, what shall we do with him after he is dead?" "Nothing, my friend, replied Camilla, but let Anselmo bury him: for he ought to take pleasure in the task of interring his own infamy. Go and beckon to him, I say, for every moment I delay my just revenge seems to injure afresh that fidelity which I owe to my husband."

All this conversation was overheard by Anselmo, whose sentiments were entirely changed by what Camilla said: and when he understood that she intended

to kill Lothario, he was inclined to come out and discover himself, in order to prevent the deed: but he was diverted from that resolution by the desire of seeing the issue of his wife's gallant and virtuous determination; purposing, however, to appear seasonably enough for the safety of his friend.

About this time Camilla, throwing herself upon a couch, was seized with a violent fit, during which Leonela wept bitterly, exclaiming, "Ah, woe is me! must I then see, expiring in these unfortunate arms, the flower of human virtue, the queen of excellent wives, the pattern of chastity!" with other epithets of the same kind, which nobody could have heard, without esteeming her the most faithful and afflicted damsel upon earth, and her mistress another persecuted Penelope. Camilla, having soon recovered from her fit, said to her woman, "Why don't you go and call this the most faithless friend that ever was seen by the day, or shrouded by the night? make haste, go, run, fly; let not the fire of my rage be consumed by your delay, and the just vengeance I mean to take evaporate in curses and unsubstantial threats." "I go, answered Leonela, but you must first give me that poignard, lest, in my absence, you do a deed to make all those who love you weep to the end of their lives." "Go, dear Leonela, replied her mistress, and fear nothing: for although, in your opinion, I may be rash and even unreasonable in thus resenting the affront upon my honour; I shall not behave like that Lucretia, who, 'tis said, killed herself, tho' innocent, without having first punished the villainous cause of her misfortune. If I must die, I will at least fall, fully revenged of him who is the occasion of my being here, to bewail his audacious behaviour, which, I am sure proceeded from no misconduct of mine."

Many intreaties did she use, before Leonela would go and call Lothario, but at length she prevailed;
the

the maid went out to seek him, and, in her absence, Camilla uttered the following soliloquy: "Good heaven! would it not have been more prudent to dismiss Lothario as usual, than to give him this occasion of thinking me vicious and immodest, even though that opinion can only last until I have an opportunity of undeceiving him? Yes, certainly: but I shall not think myself revenged, nor the honour of my husband sufficiently vindicated, if he escapes so smooth and clean from this snare into which his wicked inclinations have decoyed him. Let the traitor pay with his life for the enterprize of his lascivious desire:—the world shall know, if ever the affair be made public, that Camilla not only preserved her affection for her husband inviolate, but also took vengeance on the man who sought to impair it. Yet, methinks, I ought to disclose the whole to Anselmo: but I have already touched upon the subject in the letter I sent to him when he was in the country; and his omitting to apply a remedy to the evil I then hinted at, must certainly be owing to his own integrity and unsuspecting heart, which would not suffer him to believe, that the breast of such a constant friend could harbour one thought to the prejudice of his honour: indeed, this was my own opinion, until his behaviour became intolerably licentious, and his presents, promises and tears, fully manifested his guilty purpose. But wherefore these reflections? does a gallant resolution stand in need of hesitating advice? No!—traitor, avaunt! hither vengeance! enter, thou false, perfidious wretch, come, quick, be speedy, die, and let the consequence be what it will! Pure and unspotted I came into the possession of him whom Heaven appointed to be my husband and my lord, and equally pure shall I leave his embrace, though bathed in my own chaste blood, and embued in the tainted gore of the falsest friend that ever friendship saw?" So saying, she brandished

the

the drawn dagger in her hand, and stalked across the room with such disordered steps and violent gestures, that she seemed to have lost her senses, and looked more like a desperate russian than a delicate wife.

All this transport and agitation was perceived, with astonishment, by Anselmo, where he stood concealed behind the tapestry: he thought he had now seen and heard enough to dispel suspicions of a stronger kind than those he entertained; and even wished that the proof might proceed no farther, by Lothario's failing to keep the appointment; for he was afraid that some sudden unlucky accident might happen.—Being therefore on the point of shewing himself, and running to embrace and undeceive his wife, he was prevented by seeing Leonela return with his friend, whom Camilla no sooner beheld, than drawing a line before her, with the dagger, she said, "Take notice, Lothario, if you attempt to pass this line, or even approach it, the moment I perceive your intention, I will plunge the poignard in my breast. Without offering the least reply therefore to this declaration, I desire you will listen to some questions I mean to ask, which you may answer as you shall think proper: in the first place, tell me, Lothario, if you know my husband Anselmo, and what station he maintains in your opinion? and then be as explicit in your sentiments of me: answer without perturbation or difficulty; for the questions I ask are easily solved."

Lothario was not so ignorant, but that he had conceived her design, from the moment of her desiring him to advise Anselmo to conceal himself; and therefore, his replies were so seasonable, and corresponded so exactly with her aim, that this fiction had all the air of the most genuine truth. "Beauteous Camilla, said he, I did not imagine you had sent for me, with a view of asking questions so foreign to the purpose for which I come: If you mean to delay the promised

bliss, you might have protracted the assignation to a more distant term ; for the nearer the prospect of enjoyment is, the more grievous will the disappointment be : but, that you may have no cause to complain of my refusing to answer your demands, I will own that I know your husband Anselmo, with whom I have been intimate from our most tender years. Of the friendship (as you know) subsisting between us, I will say nothing, that I may not bear witness to the wrong which love, the powerful excuse of greater crimes, compels me to commit : you too I know, and rate as high as you can possibly be in his esteem : for a prize of less value I should not have acted so unbecoming my own character, or transgressed those laws of perfect friendship, which I have broken and violated, at the instigation of that mischievous and irresistible power."

"Since thou art self-convicted so far, replied Camilla, thou mortal enemy to all that merits love ! with what face dar'st thou appear before her who is the mirror that reflects him, and in which thou oughtest to have seen how little reason and encouragement thou hadst to wrong his honour : but, unfortunate that I am ! I have found out the cause, that induced thee to forget thyself so far : it must have been some lightness of carriage in me ; immodesty I will not call it, because it could not be the effect of deliberate determination, but must have proceeded from a neglect of some of those forms which women often inadvertently omit, before those whom they think they can entertain without ceremony. Otherwise, tell me, traitor, when did I ever answer thy addresses with any word or sign that could awaken in thy breast the least glimpse of hope to accomplish thy infamous aim ! & did I not always reject and reprove thy amorous protestations with rigour and severity ? and when were thy promises and presents believed and accepted ? But as I think no person could long persevere in such a flagitious intention,

tion, without being supported by some sort of hope, I am willing to lay the blame of your impertinence at my own door ; since, without doubt, some failure of care in me hath enabled you to exert yours so long ; and therefore, I will inflict upon myself the punishment that your crime deserves : but that you may see, in being thus inhuman to myself, it was impossible for me to deal mildly by you, I have invited you hither to be witness of the sacrifice I mean to offer to the injured honour of my noble husband, whom you have aggrieved to the utmost of your power, I myself being accessary to the wrong, because I have not industriously enough avoided all occasion, if I gave you any, of favouring and countenancing your wicked inclinations. I say, the suspicion I have, that some levity of mine engendered such frantic sentiments in your bosom, gives me the utmost pain, and prompts me to chastise my indiscretion with my own hands, rather than make my fault more public, by submitting to another executioner : but if I must perish, my fall shall be accompanied with the death of him whose blood will satisfy the vengeance which I already in some measure enjoy, when I consider that, wheresoever I go, I shall have before mine eyes the victim I offered to the most disinterested justice, in punishing the wretch who hath reduced me to this despair."

So saying, she assaulted Lothario with incredible force and agility, manifesting such eagerness to plunge the poignard in his breast, that he himself doubted whether her endeavours were feigned or real, and was actually obliged to exert his whole strength in defending himself from Camilla, who acted this strange impollure so much to the life, that, in order to give it the greater appearance of truth, she resolved to colour it with her own blood ; for, seeing, or feigning, that she could not touch Lothario, she cried, " Though fate denies me the full satisfaction of my just desire,

it cannot rob me of one part of my revenge." With these words, struggling to disengage her dagger-hand, which was held by Lothario, she at last succeeded, and directing her poignard to a part of her body, which she thought she might slightly wound without danger, she sheathed it between her shoulder and, left breast, and fell upon the floor as in a swoon.

Leonela and Lothario were astonished and confounded at this event, and still dubious whether or not Camilla was in earnest, when they saw her stretched upon the ground, and bathed in her own blood. Lothario ran in the utmost fright and consternation, to draw forth the dagger; but perceiving what a superficial wound she had made, he recovered of the terror which had begun to seize him, and could not help admiring anew the uncommon sagacity, prudence, and discretion of the beautiful Camilla; that he might therefore proceed in the part he had to act, he began to make a long and sorrowful lamentation over the body, as if she had been really dead, imprecating a thousand curses, not only upon himself, but also upon him who was the original cause of this disaster: and as he knew that Anselmo was listening, said such melancholy things, that whosoever had heard him, would have pitied his case as much as that of Camilla, though they had believed her actually dead.

Leonela lifted her up, and laying her on the bed, earnestly intreated Lothario to find some person who could cure her privately; and begged he would advise her, with regard to what she should tell Anselmo, about her lady's wound, in case he should return before she was cured: he said, she might tell him what she pleased, for he was then in no condition to give any profitable advice about the matter: he only desired her to fall upon some method of staunching the blood; and declared, that for his own part, he would go where man should never see him. He accordingly

cordingly departed, with the appearance of infinite grief and anxiety, and when he found himself alone, in a private place, crossed himself with amazement at the invention of Camilla, and the artful behaviour of her maid : he could easily conceive that Anselmo was, by this time, thoroughly convinced of his having a second Portia for his wife ; and was impatient to see him, that they might together extol her behaviour, which, though imposture, had more appearance of truth than any thing of the same kind that had ever been practised.

Leonela, as she was desired, stopt her lady's blood, of which there was just enough to give credit to her artifice ; and washing the wound with a little wine, bound it up as well as she could, uttering such sorrowful expressions all the time, as would have been sufficient, without any previous lamentation, to persuade Anselmo that his wife was the mirror of chastity.

Leonela's complaints were joined by those of her mistress, who taxed herself with cowardice and pusillanimity, in having lost the best opportunity she should ever have of parting with that life which she abhorred. She consulted her maid about disclosing the whole affair to her beloved spouse ; but this scheme Leonela opposed, observing, that it would lay her master under an obligation of taking vengeance on Lothario ; a satisfaction he could not enjoy without exposing himself to great danger : and that a virtuous woman, far from seeking to involve her husband in quarrels, was in duty bound to keep him free of all such disputes, by every method in her power. Camilla seemed to approve of her maid's prudence ; and promised to follow her advice ; but said it would be necessary, at all events, to invent some excuse to Anselmo, about the wound which he could not fail of observing. Leonela assuring her, that she could never tell a lie even in jest, the mistress replied, " What shall I do then, child ? for I

K 3

would

would not attempt to frame and maintain a falsehood, even though my life depended upon it : since therefore we know not how to extricate ourselves otherwise, we must e'en discover the naked truth, rather than run the risk of being detected in a lie." " Don't give yourself any further uneasiness, madam, said Leonela, by to-morrow morning I shall have found some expedient : perhaps the wound being where it is, may be concealed from his view, and Heaven vouchsafe to favour our upright and honourable intention. Compose yourself, dear madam, endeavour to calm the perturbation of your spirits, that my master may not perceive your disorder ; and leave the consequence to my care, and that of Heaven, which never fails to favour the righteous design."

Anselmo listened with the utmost attention to this tragedy of the death of his honour, which was represented with such exquisite and surprising address, that the actors seemed really transformed into the very characters they feigned : he longed impatiently for night, and an opportunity of escaping unseen, that he might fly to his worthy friend Lothario, and receive his congratulation upon the precious jewel he had found in this vindication of his wife's virtue : they took care to furnish him with the occasion he wanted ; and he, without letting it slip, ran immediately in quest of Lothario : it would be difficult to describe the eagerness of his embraces at meeting, or to recount the expressions he used in the overflowings of his satisfaction, and the extravagant praises he bestowed on Camilla. All these Lothario heard, without being able to manifest the least signs of joy ; his reflection taxed him with the deceit he had practised, and the injury he had done his unsuspecting friend. Anselmo took notice, that he did not seem to participate in his pleasure, but believed his concern proceeded from the thoughts of having been the occasion of Camilla's wound :

wound: he therefore, among other things, told him to make himself easy on that score; for the hurt must certainly have been very slight, as they had agreed to conceal it from his knowledge; and since there was no bad consequence to be apprehended, he hoped for the future, to enjoy, in mirth and good humour, the friendship of his dear Lothario, by whose industry and mediation he now saw himself raised to the most sublime pitch of human felicity: at the same time he signified, that his desire and design was to pursue no other amusement than that of composing verses in praise of Camilla, that should transmit to latest posterity the remembrance of her worth.

Lothario commended his laudible determination, and promised to contribute all that lay in his power towards the rearing of such an illustrious edifice: so that Anselmo, being the most agreeably deceived of any man that ever lived, led by the hand, to his own house, the very man who, though in his opinion the instrument of his glory, was the total perdition of his fame. Camilla received him with a countenance expressing resentment, but a soul brimful of joy; and their secret correspondence continued uninterrupted for a few months, at the end of which, the wheel of fortune having performed a full circle, the intrigue, which had been hitherto so artfully concealed, was discovered, and Anselmo's Impertinent Curiosity cost him his life.

CHAP. VIII.

The Conclusion of the Impertinent Curiosity.

A LITTLE more of this novel remained to be read, when Sancho came running, in great confusion, from the garret where his master Don Quixote lay, bawling aloud, "Come hither, gentlemen! make haste to the assistance

assistance of my master, who is this precious minute engaged and grappled in the toughest battle that ever my eyes beheld ! Egad ! he has given that same giant, the enemy of my lady the princess of Micomicona, such a back-stroke, as hath sliced off his head, as smooth and clean as the skin of a turnip." "What do you mean, brother, said the curate, closing the book? are you in your right wits, Sancho? how the devil can your master be fighting with a giant who is two thousand leagues from hence?"

That instant, they heard a great noise in the apartment, and Don Quixote pronounced aloud, "Stay, villain, robber, caitiff, here I have thee, and thy scymitar shall not avail." Then he began to strike furiously at the walls; and Sancho exclaimed, Don't stand here listening, but go in and part the fray, or lend your assistance to my master; though I believe that will be needless by this time; for the giant is certainly dead, and giving an account to God of his wicked and mispent life: nay, I saw with my own eyes his blood running about the floor, and his head cut off, lying on one side as a large wine bag." "May I be hanged, cried the innkeeper, at these words, if this Don Quixote, or Don Devil, has not cut open one of the skins filled with red wine, that stood at his bed's head, and the wine that ran out is mistaken by this simple fellow for blood!"

So saying, he rushed into the apartment with the whole company at his heels, and found the knight in a very ludicrous situation: he appeared in his shirt, which was too scanty before, to cover his thighs, and still shorter behind, by six inches at least, and displayed a pair of long lank legs, imbrowned with hair, and not extremely clean; his head was covered with a little, red, greasy nightcap, belonging to the landlord; round his left arm he had wrapt the blanket of his bed, to which Sancho, for good reasons known to himself,

himself, bore an inveterate grudge; and in his right, he wielded his drawn sword, with which he laid about him at a furious rate, talking as if he was actually at blows with the giant: but what was very surprising, his eyes were shut all the time, and he was fast asleep, dreaming of this encounter; for his imagination was so much engrossed by the adventure he had undertaken to atchieve, as to make him dream that he was already arrived in the kingdom of Micomicon, and engaged in single combat with his gigantic adversary, instead of whom he hacked the wine-bags so furiously, that the whole room was afloat with their contents.

The innkeeper no sooner perceived this havock, than, incensed to the last degree, he assaulted Don Quixote with his clenched fists, and began to pummel him so severely, that if the curate and Cardenio had not interposed, he would soon have put an end to the adventure of the giant: yet, for all that, the poor knight did not awake, until the barber, fetching a kettle of cold water from the well, souied him all over; even then, tho' sleep forsook him, he did not recollect the situation he was in; and Dorothea seeing him so slight and airily equipt, did not choole to be a spectator of the combat between her adversary and protector. Mean while, Sancho, went about the room, prying into every corner, and searching for the giant's head, which when he could not find, "I knew, said he, that every thing goes by enchantment in this house: the last time I was in this very spot, I received a great many thwacks and thumps, without seeing a soul, or being able to guess from whence they came; and now this head is vanished, tho' I saw it cut off with mine own eyes, and the blood spout out of the hole like water from a fountain." "What dost thou talk of blood and fountains, thou enemy of God and his saints, cried the innkeeper!" dont you see, rascal, that there is no blood or fountain, but the skins that
are

are pierced, and the red wine that swims about the room? I hope the soul of him who pierced them will swim in hell!" "I know nothing of the matter, replied Sancho; but that, on account of my not finding the head, I shall see my earldom dissolve like salt in water."

Thus the squire, tho' awake, was more extravagant than Don Quixote in his dream: such an impression had his master's promises made upon his imagination. The phlegmatic temper of the squire, together with the mischievous disposition of the knight, well-nigh distracted the landlord, who swore, that they should not now, as formerly, go away without paying; and that all the privilege of their errantry should not exempt them from paying both reckonings to the last farthing, for the damage they had done, even to the bits of leather for botching the wine skins that were cut. The curate, by this time, had got hold of the hands of Don Quixote, who, believing he had now finished the adventure, and was in presence of the princess Micomicona, fell upon his knees before the priest, saying, "Renowned princess, your highness may henceforth live secure of what that misbegotten wretch can do; and I from this day forward am acquitted of my promise, which is now, by the assistance of Heaven above, and the favour of her for whom I live and breathe, happily and fully performed." "Did not I tell you so?" cried Sancho, hearing these words. "You see I am not drunk, and may take notice that my master hath put the giant in pickle—the holidays will certainly come round, and the earldom sit me to a hair."

Who could refrain from laughing at the follies of the master and man? they occasioned abundance of mirth to every one present, except the landlord, who cursed himself to the devil. At length the barber, curate, and Cardenio, with no such small difficulty, put

the knight to bed again, where he fell asleep in an instant, like one who had been excessively fatigued : they left him to his repose, and went out to console Sancho for his disappointment in losing the giant's head ; but they found it a harder task to pacify the innkeeper, who was driven almost to despair, by the sudden death of his wine bags : besides, the landlady began to cry, in a whimpering tone, " In an unlucky minute and evil hour did this knight-errant enter my doors ; for I am sure, I never beheld him, without paying dearly for the sight ! The last time he was here, he refused to defray a whole night's expence of supper, lodging, straw and barley, for himself and his squire, his horse and his ass ; saying that he was a knight-errant forsooth, (God send him and all other knights-errant on errands that will tend to their sorrow !) and therefore was not obliged to pay for any thing, because it was not ordained in the registers of chivalry : then this gentleman coming after him t'other day, borrowed my tail, and though I have got it again, it is a good penny the worse for the wearing, the hair being plucked off in such a manner as makes it unfit for my husband's purpose ; and to finish and conclude the whole, my bags are broke, and my wine spilt : (would I could see his heart's blood in the same condition !) but he must not think to get off so easily, for by the bones of my father, and my mother's soul ! they shall pay for every thing upon the nail ; or may I never be called by my own name again, or believed to be my father's own child ! "

These, and other expressions of the same kind, were uttered, with great bitterness, by the landlady ; and her faithful servant Maritornes joined in the exclamation, while the daughter held her peace, and, from time to time, smiled at their indignation, which at last was appeased by the curate, who promised to give them satisfaction, to the best of his power, for the loss

loss they had sustained in bags and wine, and, in particular, for the damage done to the tail, which they valued so highly: and Dorothea comforted Sancho, by telling him, that as soon as ever it should appear that his master had actually cut off the giant's head, and she should find herself in quiet possession of her kingdom, she would bestow upon him the best earldom in her gift. The squire was consoled by this promise, and assured the princess, that he was certain he had seen the giant's head, by the same token, that he had a huge beard that flowed down to his middle! and that the whole was now vanished, because every thing in that house was performed by enchantment, as he had found by woeful experience the last time he had lodged in that apartment. Dorothea said she was of the same opinion, desiring he would give himself no uneasiness, for every thing would be for the best, and succeed to his heart's content. The quiet of the house being thus re-established, the curate wanted to read the remaining part of the novel, which, he perceived, already drew near a close; and Cardenio, Dorothea, and the rest, intreating him to finish the story, he, with a view of pleasing them as well as himself, proceeded in these words:

"Anselmo being now satisfied of his wife's virtue, enjoyed himself without the least disturbance or care; while Camilla, in order to disguise her real sentiments, affected always to frown upon Lothario, who, as a further sanction to this stratagem, desired Anselmo to excuse him from coming to his house, since it was plain that Camilla was disgusted at his presence: but the infatuated Anselmo would by no means comply with this request, so that this unhappy husband was, in a thousand shapes, the author of his own dishonour, while in his own opinion he was laying up a store of happiness and reputation.

About this time, Leonela's desire of gratifying her

OWN

own
that
least
ceal
the in
ed.
someb
ing to
again
he ma
on wh
the wi
get fig
by Le
"Hol
sue the
count,
Ansel
blinded
nela, w
pain of
answere
my life
importa
Anselm
sent, rep
I cannot
your ver
shall hea
ment; r
of the w
given m
Ansel
tion, res
he never
dice of C
secure:
VOL.

own loose wishes, carried her to a pitch of imprudence, that she gave her wantonness the rein without the least caution; conscious that her mistress would conceal her conduct, and even advise her how to carry on the intrigue without the least danger of being detected. At length, however, Anselmo, one night heard somebody walking in her apartment, and endeavouring to get in and see who it was, found the door shut against him. This circumstance increased his desire, he made a violent effort, and the door flew open, upon which he entered, and seeing a man leap out of the window into the street, ran hastily to lay hold or get sight of him; but he was disappointed in both, by Leonela, who, hanging upon her master, cried, "Hold, dear Sir, be not surpris'd, nor seek to pursue the person who is fled; he was here on my account, and is as good as my wedded husband."

Anselmo would give no credit to her words, but, blinded with passion, drew his poignard to stab Leonela, whom he commanded to reveal the truth, on pain of immediate death. She, terrified by his threats, answered, without knowing what she said. "Spare my life, good Sir, and I will disclose things of greater importance than you imagine." "Speak then," cried Anselmo, or thou shalt instantly die." "At present," replied Leonela, I am in such perturbation, that I cannot possibly make a distinct confession—delay your vengeance till to-morrow morning, and then you shall hear something that will strike you with astonishment; mean while be assured, that he who leapt out of the window is a young man of this city, who has given me a promise of marriage.

Anselmo, being somewhat pacified by this declaration, resolved to grant the respite she demanded; tho' he never dream'd of hearing any thing to the prejudice of Camilla, of whose virtue he was satisfied and secure: he therefore quitted the room, in which, however,

ever, he locked up Leonela, telling her, she must continue in that place until she should have made this promised discovery: then going to Camilla, informed her of every thing that had passed, together with the promise her maid had made of discovering things of great importance. It is almost needless to say that Camilla was disturbed at this information; the terror that took possession of her was such, that believing, with good reason too, Leonela would actually disclose to Anselmo every circumstance of her infidelity, she had not resolution enough to wait the issue of her suspicion; but that very night, while her husband was asleep, collected the best of her jewels, with some money, and getting out of the house, without being perceived, fled to Lothario, and recounted what had happened; at the same time, beseeching him to put her in a place of safety, or accompany her to some retreat, where they should be secure from the search of Anselmo.

Such was the confusion of Lothario, at the news of this unexpected event, that he could not answer one syllable, nor for some time resolve upon what was to be done. At length, he proposed to carry Camilla to a monastery, the abbess of which was his first cousin; and his mistress consenting to the proposal, he conducted her thither, with all the dispatch which the nature of the case required, and leaving her to the care of his relation, quitted the city that very night, without imparting the cause of his absence to any living soul.

Next morning, as soon as it was day, Anselmo, without perceiving that Camilla was gone, so eagerly did he long to hear this confession of her maid, arose and went directly to the room in which he had confined her; but he no sooner opened the door, and entered the apartment, than he perceived the sheets of the bed tied together, hanging out at the window;

a ma-

a manifest proof that Leonela had lowered herself down into the street by means of that contrivance; he then returned, with a good deal of chagrin, to communicate his disappointment to Camilla, whom when he could not find, he was seized with the utmost consternation, especially as none of the servants could give the least account of her departure: but chancing, in the course of his enquiry, to find the coffers open, and the best part of her jewels carried off, he began to comprehend his disgrace; and concluded, that Leonela was not the cause of his misfortune.

Dispirited with this reflection, he did not stay to dress, but went, in a most disconsolate situation, to give an account of his mishap to his friend Lothario; and when he understood from his servants, that their master had gone out in the night, and carried all his ready money along with him, he had well nigh lost his senses. To crown his misery, he returned to his own house, which was deserted by all his servants, and found himself the most solitary being in nature: he knew not what to think, say, or do, and his judgment began to be impaired; for upon recollection, he perceived that he was, in an instant, deprived of wife, friend, and servants; renounced by heaven, and, what he felt more deeply than any other part of his disaster, destitute of honour by the misconduct of Camilla, from which he dated his utter destruction. At length, after a long internal struggle, he resolved to go to the country house of his friend, where he had been, when he furnished the opportunity of planning his own ruin. Accordingly, having locked his door, he mounted his horse, and almost fainting under the burthen of his woes, set out for that place: but scarce had he travelled one half of the way, when, harassed by his shocking reflections, he was obliged to alight and tie his horse to a tree, at the root of which he threw himself down, giving vent to the most lamentable

mentable sighs that ever were heaved : there he remained till the twilight, about which time he perceived a man coming on horseback from the city, after salutation, he asked what news were stirring at Florence ?—" The strangest, replied the citizen, that have been heard these many days : it is publicly reported, that Lothario, the intimate friend of Anselmo the rich, who lived at St John's, hath this last night carried off the wife of his friend, who is also missing. This discovery was made to the governor by Camilla's maid, who was detected in letting herself down by a sheet from one of the windows of Anselmo's house : in short, I do not know the particulars exactly ; but the whole city is astonished at this event, which they could never have expected from the intimacy of the two gentlemen, who were so strictly united in the bands of amity, as to acquire the title of the Two Friends." " Do you know what road Lothario and Camilla have taken," said Anselmo ? " That is not yet discovered, replied the traveller ; tho' the governor hath used great diligence in the enquiry." Anselmo wished him a good even ; and the citizen having returned the compliment, proceeded on his journey.

This unhappy news reduced this ill-fated husband to the verge of death as well as distraction : he mounted, however, as well as he could, and arrived at the house of his friend, who had not as yet heard of his misfortune ; but seeing him so exhausted, ghastly, and pale, he imagined he had met with some grievous disaster. Anselmo begged to be put to bed immediately, and furnished with pen, ink, and paper : thus provided, he was left alone, and the chamber locked, at his own desire : then the remembrance of his misfortune began to be so heavy upon his soul, that he plainly perceived his end approaching, and being desirous of declaring the cause of his strange and sudden death,

death,
his de
tim to
imper
late, a
chamb
him ly
and th
and a
The
ceiving
him co
and co
mily t
knowin
ting, r
prived
the ne
know
bound
of exp
have b
is no r
had for
Next d
his par
chance,
retreat
compar
not so
consequ
ing her
now a v
take th
Lothari
between
Cordow

death, took up the pen ; but before he could execute his design, his breathe failed him, and he expired, a victim to that sorrow which was occasioned by his own impertinent curiosity. His friend finding it grow late, and that Anselmo had not called, went into his chamber to enquire about his health : there he found him lying upon his face, one half of his body in bed, and the other on the table, with a pen in his hand, and a written paper lying open before him.

The gentleman, having spoke to him, without receiving an answer, took him by the hand, and feeling him cold and stiff, concluded he was dead. Surprized and concerned to the last degree, he called up his family to be witnesses of this melancholy event, and knowing the paper to be Anselmo's own hand-writing, read the contents in these words : " I am deprived of life by my own impertinent curiosity : if the news of my death reach Camilla's ears, let her know that I forgive her infidelity : for she was not bound to perform miracles, nor I under any necessity of expecting them at her hands : since therefore, I have been the contriver of my own dishonour, there is no reason that—" So far he had written, but life had forsaken him before he could finish the sentence. Next day, his friend sent an account of his death to his parents, who were already informed of his mischance, as also of the convent to which Camilla had retreated ; and where she now lay at the point of accompanying her spouse in his last indispensable journey ; not so much on account of Anselmo's death, as in consequence of the information she received concerning her absent lover : it was said, that tho' she was now a widow, she would neither quit the convent, nor take the veil : but in a little time, the news arrived of Lothario's being killed in a battle, which was fought between the renowned captain Goncalo Fernandez de Cordova, and monsieur de Lautrec, in the kingdom

of Naples, whither this too late repenting friend had made his retreat. This event was no sooner known, than Camilla professed herself nun, and, in a few days, yielded up her life a prey to grief and melancholy. Such was the untimely end to which they were all brought, from a beginning of whim and indifere-tion!"

This novel, said the curate, is not amiss; but I cannot think the story is true, and if it be feigned, the author has erred in point of invention; for it cannot be supposed, that any husband would be so mad as to try this dangerous experiment of Anselmo: had it been related of a gallant and his mistress, it might have passed; but, with regard to a husband and his wife, it is altogether improbable: however, the manner of narrating it is not disagreeable.

CHAP. IX.

An account of other strange adventures that happened at the inn.

AT that instant the landlord, standing at the inn-door, exclaimed, "There is a noble company: odd! if they halt here, we shall sing for joy." "What company," said Cardenio? "Four men, replied the innkeeper, who ride with short stirrups, each of them equipped with lance, target, and mask; with a lady on a side-saddle, dressed in white and veiled, and two attendants on foot." When the priest asked if they were near, he answered, "So near, that they are already at the gate."

Dorothea, hearing this information, put on her veil, and Cardenio withdrew into Don Quixote's apartment. Immediately the whole company, announced by the landlord, entered the inn-yard, and the four horsemen, who were persons of genteel mien and carriage

riage, instantly alighting, went to help the lady from her horse ; when one of them, taking her in his arms, placed her in a chair that stood by the door of the room in which Cardenio had concealed himself. All this time neither she nor they took off their masks, nor uttered one syllable ; but when she was seated, she heaved a profound sigh, and let her arms fall down on each side, like a person fainting with weakness. While the footman led the horses into the stable, the curate, being curious to know who those persons were, so remarkable in their silence and dress, went up and put the question to one of the lacquies, who answered, Truly, signior, we are as ignorant in that particular as you are ; though they seem to be people of condition, especially he who took the lady in his arms, because all the rest behave to him with great respect, following his directions in every thing, with the utmost punctuality." " And, pray who may the lady be," said the priest ? " We know as little of her as of the men, replied the lacquey ; for during the journey, I have never once beheld her face, I have often heard her sigh bitterly, and utter piercing groans, in every one of which she seemed to yield her very soul : but it is not to be wondered at that we should know so little of their affairs ; my companion and I having attended them two days only ; for meeting us on the road, they intreated and persuaded us to accompany them as far as Andalusia, promising to pay us handsomely for our trouble." " Have you never heard one of them named," resumed the curate ? " Never once, answered the young man ; they travel with surprising silence ; nothing is heard but the sobs and sighs of the poor lady, which move us to compassion : we firmly believe that she is forced upon this journey ; and gather from her dress that she is a nun, or which is more probable, going to take the veil ; and finding herself

herself very little inclined to that way of life, is melancholy at the prospect."

The curate said, nothing was more probable; and leaving the lacquey, returned to Dorothea, who, by this time, out of natural sympathy with the affliction of the masked lady, had approached and accosted her in these words: "What is the matter with you, dear madam? If you labour under any indisposition which the practice and experience of women can relieve, my assistance is heartily at your service." To this kind offer no reply was made by the sorrowful lady, who, notwithstanding the other's repeated intreaties, would not open her mouth, until the person, who, by the lacquies information, was chief of the company, addressing himself to Dorothea, said, "Do not fatigue yourself, madam, in making proffers of service to that woman, who cannot be grateful for any favour she receives; nor importune her for any reply, unless you desire to hear some falsehoods proceed from her lips." "My lips, said the hitherto silent lady, were never profaned with falsehood; on the contrary, my present misfortune is owing to my sincerity and my abhorrence of lies. Of this assertion, you yourself are too sensible; since your own perfidy and falsehood are the effects of my constancy and truth."

These words were distinctly overheard by Cardenio, who was only separated from them by the door of Don Quixote's chamber; and they no sooner reached his ears, than he cried aloud, "Good heaven? What do I hear! What voice is that which struck my sense!" The lady being exceedingly surprized at that exclamation, turned about her head, and not seeing the person that pronounced it, started up and ran towards the apartment from whence it seemed to come; but was prevented by her conductor, who would not suffer her to move one step farther. In the disorder occasioned by her struggle, her mask dropped off, and discovered

a count-

a countenance of incomparable and amazing beauty, even though disguised with paleness and horror; for her eyes rolled about to every corner which her sight could reach, with such eagerness and wildness, that she looked like a woman possessed.

Dorothea, and all present, were infinitely concerned at these symptoms, the meaning of which they could not understand: mean while, the cavalier was so busied in holding her fast by the shoulders, that he could not attend to his mask, which also fell to the ground: and Dorothea lifting up her eyes towards him, as he held the lady in his arms, perceived that this cavalier was no other than her own husband, Don Fernando. No sooner did she recognize his features, than fetching a long and melancholy sigh from the very bottom of her soul, she fell backward in a swoon, and if the barber had not been at hand to support her would have certainly come to the ground: the curate ran instantly to take off her veil, that he might sprinkle water on her face, which was immediately known by Don Fernando, who held the other lady in his arms, and was thunderstruck at the sight: he would not, however, quit Lucinda, who struggled to get loose: she and Cardenio having by this time recognized each other by their mutual exclamations: he had also overheard the groan uttered by Dorothea, when she fainted, and believing that it proceeded from Lucinda, rushed out of his apartment in a fright, when the first object he beheld was Don Fernando clasping her in his arms. This nobleman knew him immediately, and all three, namely, Lucinda, Cardenio, and Dorothea, were struck dumb with astonishment, and seemed insensible of what had happened; gazing in silence at one another.

Dorothea directed her eager view to Don Fernando, who stared at Cardenio, whose eyes were fixed upon Lucinda, who looked wishfully at him; but the
first

first that broke silence was this last, who addressed herself in these words to Don Fernando: "Suffer me signor, in regard to your own character, since you are deaf to every other consideration, to cleave to that wall of which I am the ivy, to avail myself of that prop from which you could not disengage me, with all your importunities, promises and threats. Behold how Heaven, by unusual and mysterious means, hath brought me to my true and lawful husband: and since you know, by dear bought experience, that nothing but death can expel his image from my breast, let this plain demonstration, since all other attempts are vain, convert your love into rage, your friendship into hate, and instantly deprive me of life, which I shall yield with pleasure in the presence of my legal lord, who will then, perhaps, be convinced of the fidelity I preserved to the last moment of my existence."

In the mean time Dorothea, being recovered from her swoon, had listened to Lucinda's declaration, by which she discovered her situation and name: but perceiving that Don Fernando neither quitted his hold, nor answered one word to her solicitation, she exerted her whole strength in falling down on her knees before him, and having shed a large quantity of tears from her beautiful eyes, accosted him in these words: "My dear lord! if your eyes were not dazzled and obscured by the rays of that sun which you hold eclipsed within your arms, you would perceive that she who thus kneels before you, is the unhappy (so long as you are pleased she should be so) and forlorn Dorothea—I am that humble country-maiden whom your generosity or passion vouchsafed to raise to the honour of calling you her own. I am she who, confined within the bounds of modesty, lived a contented life, until moved by your importunities, and seemingly upright addresses, she opened the gates of her reserve, and surrendered to you the keys of her freedom. An offer-

ing

ing but ill requited, as plainly appears by that hard fate, in consequence of which I am found in this place, and also find you in your present situation. Nevertheless, I would not have you imagine that I came hither, induced by any dishonourable motives; but that the sorrow conceived at seeing myself forsaken and forgotten by you, was the sole cause of my retreat. You desired I should be your own, and that desire you accomplished so effectually, that although your inclinations may be changed, it is impossible you should cease to be mine. Consider, my lord, that my unparalleled affection may counterbalance the beauty and birth of her, for whom I am abandoned: you cannot be the fair Lucinda's husband, because you are already mine, nor she become your wife, while she appertains to Cardenio; and it will be a much easier task if you reflect upon it impartially, to recal your love for her who adores you, than to gain the affection of one by whom you are abhorred. You solicited my unsuspecting heart, you importuned my integrity, you was not ignorant of my lowly station, and know in what manner I yielded to your will: so that you have no subterfuge, nor the least room to say you was deceived. If this be the case, as doubtless it is, and you be a christian as well as a gentleman, why do you, by such evasions, delay to make the end as happy as the beginning of my fortune? If you will not receive me as what I really am, your lawful wife, at least admit me into the number of your slaves; for in whatever shape I belong to you, I shall account myself fortunate and blessed: do not, therefore, by renouncing me entirely, give scandal an opportunity of impeaching my honour. Make not my parents miserable in their old age; their faithful services to your father merit a more kind return: if you think your blood will be debased in mixing with mine, consider, that almost all the great families on earth have undergone the same intercourse,

course, and that the woman's quality in no manner affects illustrious descents; besides, true nobility consists in virtue, and in that shall I have the advantage over you, if you deny and oppose the justice of my claim. In fine, the last argument I shall use is this, whether you are pleased or displeased with your destiny, I am your lawful wife; witness your own words, which neither are nor ought to be false, if you value yourself on that, for which you undervalue me; witness your hand-writing, and heaven above, to the testimony of which you appealed, for the performance of your promise; and if all these should fail, your conscience will never cease whispering to you, amidst your pleasures, in vindication of this truth, which will disturb your most exalted enjoyments."

This supplication, enforced with other arguments, was pronounced so feelingly by the afflicted and weeping Dorothea, that tears of sympathy were shed by all present, the companions of Don Fernando not excepted: he himself listened without answering one word, until she had made an end of her address, and begun to utter such woeful sighs and groans as were almost sufficient to melt an heart of brass. Lucinda stood gazing upon her with equal compassion for her sorrow and admiration of her beauty and good sense; nay, she would have gone and offered her all the consolation in her power, had she not still been kept fast locked in the arms of Don Fernando, who, full of confusion and surprize, after having for a good while fixed his eyes upon Dorothea, with great attention, opened his arms, and leaving Lucinda at liberty, said, "You have conquered, beauteous Dorothea—The victory is yours; for so many truths conjoined are surely irresistible."

Lucinda was so faint and weak, that when Don Fernando quitted her, she would have fallen to the ground, had it not been for Cardenio, who had placed himself

himself
know
to ad
of I
he, it
you
charm
where
ceive.
was p
At
eager
voice,
depriv
form,
her lip
are th
fate, a
are, t
yours
An
and al
prized
her hu
of bein
upon h
ing hi
braced
incessa
only re
ow w
you de
confide
that w
unite y

* But
to Fern
VOL.

himself behind her ravisher, that he might not be known * ; but now, laying aside all fear, and resolving to adventure every thing, he sprung to the assistance of Lucinda, and catching her in his arms, " If, said he, it be the will and pleasure of pitying Heaven that you should find repose, my faithful, constant, and charming Lucinda ! I think you can enjoy it no where so securely, as in these arms, which now receive and that formerly encircled you, when fortune was pleased that I should call you mine."

At these words, she gazed upon him with great eagerness ; she had before begun to recognize his voice, and now recollecting his features, like a person deprived of judgment, who disregards all decency and form, she threw her arms about his neck, and joining her lips to his ; " Yes, my dear Cardenio, said she, you are the real lord of this your slave, in spite of adverse fate, and all those threats, though greater than they are, that persecute my life, which now depends on yours alone."

An unexpected fight was this to Don Fernando, and all the bye-standers, who were not a little surprized at what they saw. While Dorothea observing her husband change colour, and signify an inclination of being revenged upon Cardenio, by laying his hand upon his sword, ran, with incredible agility, and clasping his knees, which she kissed, held him so firmly embraced that he could not move, saying, while the tears incessantly trickled from her eyes, " What means my only refuge to do on this unexpected occasion ? Your own wife is now kneeling before you, and she whom you desire to wed is in the arms of her lawful husband ; consider whether it be just or possible for you to undo that which Heaven hath done, why should you seek to unite yourself with one who, disdaining all opposition

* But it appears, p. 128, that he was already known both to Fernando and Lucinda. *Aliquando bonus dormitat Homerus.*

and inconvenience, and confirmed in her own constancy and truth, even before your eyes, lets fall from hers a shower of tenderness into the bosom of her lawful spouse? For the sake of God and of yourself, I intreat and beseech you, that this remarkable recognition may not only fail to increase your indignation, but even diminish it in such a manner, that these two lovers may, without any impediment from you, enjoy each other as long as Heaven will permit them to live. In this self-denial you will manifest the generosity of your noble and illustrious soul, and convince the world, that you are governed more by reason than by appetite."

While Dorothea pronounced these words, Cardenio, though he held Lucinda in his arms, kept his eyes still fixed upon Don Fernando, with full resolution, if he attempted any thing to his prejudice, to defend himself as well as he could, against his adversary and all his adherents, although it should cost him his life. But this young nobleman's friends, together with the curate and barber, not forgetting honest Sancho Panza, who were present at the whole affair, interposed, and making a circle about him, begged earnestly, that he would be pleased to consider the tears of Dorothea, and if what she alledged was true, as they firmly believed it was, no longer suffer her to be defrauded of her just and reasonable hope. They desired him to observe, that in all appearance it was not by accident, but the immediate direction of Providence, that they had all met together so unexpectedly in this place: and the curate intreated him to reflect that death alone could divide Lucinda from Cardenio! that though they might be parted by the edge of the sword, they would look upon death as the greatest blessing that could befall them; and that, in a case of this kind, which admitted of no other remedy, it would be his wisest course to constrain and conquer

his

his own passion, and demonstrate the generosity of his heart, by permitting, of his own free-will, these two lovers to enjoy that state of happiness which Heaven had ordained for their lot: that he should contemplate Dorothea's beauty, which, far from being excelled, was equalled in few or none; and to her beauty, add the consideration of her humility and excessive love; above all, take notice, that if he valued himself upon being a gentleman and a christian, he could do no less than perform the promise he had given, and in so doing, act in conformity to the will of God, and satisfy the discreet part of mankind, who are very sensible, that it is the prerogative of beauty, even in a low estate, when accompanied with virtue, to be lifted up to the highest rank, without any disparagement to the person who thus raises it to an equality with himself; and since the irresistible force of inclination must prevail, provided there be nothing criminal in the means, he is not to be blamed who acts according to its dictates."

To these arguments were added so many of the same sort, that the valiant heart of Don Fernando, nourished by illustrious blood, relented, and he was overcome by the force of that truth which, however inclined, he could not deny. The signal of his surrender, and yielding to this reasonable and just proposal, was his stooping down and embracing Dorothea, to whom he said, "Rise, madam; it is not just that she who reigns in my soul, should lie prostrate at my feet. If hitherto, I have given small proof of what I now profess, perhaps my omission hath been owing to the appointment of Heaven, that by giving you an opportunity of manifesting the sincerity of your love, I might know how to esteem you according to your deserts. I beg therefore, you will not upbraid me with my misconduct and unkind neglect; since the same force and occasion that attached me to you,

was the cause of my endeavour to disengage myself. That you may be convinced of the truth, behold and contemplate the eyes of the now contented Lucinda, in which you will find an excuse for all my errors: and, since she hath found and attained her heart's desire, and my utmost wish is fulfilled in thus retrieving you, may she live in peace and quiet, for many happy years, with her Cardenio, and may Heaven grant the same felicity to me with Dorothea."

So saying, he embraced her again, pressing his lips to hers with such tenderness, that it required his greatest efforts to forbear giving, with his tears, indubitable signs of his affection and remorse. But those endeavours did not succeed with Lucinda, Cardenio, and every other person present, who began to weep so plentifully, either at their own happiness, or the satisfaction of their friends, that one would have thought some grievous misfortune had happened to the whole company. Even Sancho blubbered, tho' he afterwards owned, that his sorrow proceeded from seeing that Dorothea was not, as he imagined, the queen of Micomicon, from whom he expected such favours.

This universal admiration and thaw having lasted some time, Cardenio and Lucinda fell upon their knees before Don Fernando, whom they thanked for his generosity in such polite terms, that he scarce knew what answer to make, but raised and embraced them both, with demonstrations of uncommon courtesy and affection. Then asking Dorothea, how she had come to that place so distant from her own home, she, with great elegance and brevity, repeated what she had before recounted to Cardenio: and her husband and his company were so pleased with her narration, that they wished it could have been spun out to a much greater length: so gracefully did she relate her own misfortunes.

Her task being finished. Don Fernando informed them of what had happened to him in the city after he found, in Lucinda's bosom, the paper in which she declared herself Cardenio's wife. Seeing that she could not possibly be his, he said he was determined to put her to death, and would actually have executed his purpose, had not her parents interposed. He then quitted the house, full of shame and resentment, resolving to revenge himself with the first opportunity; and next day understood that she was gone off, without any body's knowing whither she had directed her flight. At length, however, in a few months, he got notice, that she was in a certain monastery where she intended to spend her whole life, if she could not enjoy it in the company of Cardenio. He no sooner received this intimation, than choosing these three gentlemen for his companions, he went strait to the place of her residence, but without speaking to her, or making himself known, lest the monastery should be more strictly guarded on his account. He waited therefore, until one day he found the porter's lodge open, when leaving two of his friends to secure the door, he entered the monastery, with the other in quest of Lucinda, whom he found in the cloisters, talking with a nun; and snatching her off, without giving her a moment's time for recollection, carried her instantly to a place where they provided themselves with necessaries for their journey. This exploit they were enabled to perform with safety, because the monastery stood in the middle of a field, at a good distance from any village or town. He said, Lucinda no sooner perceived herself in his power, than she fainted away, and when she recovered the use of her senses, did nothing but weep and sigh, without speaking one word; so that, accompanied with silence and tears, they had arrived at that inn, which he looked upon as the heavenly goal where all earthly misfortunes were happily terminated.

CHAP. X.

A continuation of the history of the renowned princess Micomicona ; with other pleasant adventures.

SANCHO heard every thing that passed with no small anxiety of mind, seeing the hopes of his preferment vanish into smoke, the beautiful princess Micomicona transformed into Dorothea, the giant into Don Fernando, and his master in a sound sleep, little dreaming of what had happened. Dorothea could not persuade herself, that all her good fortune was not a dream ; Cardenio entertained the same opinion, which was also embraced by Lucinda ; while Don Fernando gave thanks to Heaven for its favour, in extricating him from that labyrinth of perplexity, in which he was at the point of losing his reputation and soul. In fine, every person present was well satisfied, and rejoiced at the happy issue of such intricate and desperate affairs. The curate represented every thing in the right point of view, with great discretion, and congratulated the parties concerned on the felicity they had acquired ; but she whose joy was most vociferous was the landlady, who loudly exulted in the promise of Cardenio and the curate, who had undertaken to pay her with interest, for the damage he had sustained on Don Quixote's account. Sancho alone, as we have already observed, was afflicted, unfortunate, and sad ; and going to his master who was just awake, said, with a lamentable tone, " Sir Knight of the Rueful Countenance, your worship may now sleep as long as you please, without giving yourself the trouble of slaying the giant, or restoring the princess to her throne—that whole affair is already brought to conclusion."

" I really believe what you say, answered the knight ;

knight; for I have been engaged with the giant, in the most obstinate and outrageous combat that I believe I shall ever fight in all the days of my life: with one back stroke, flam went his head to the ground; and discharged such a quantity of blood, that it ran like rills of water along the field." "Or rather like red wine, your worship should say, replied the squire; for I must inform you, if you do not already know it, that the dead giant is no other than a wine-bag, and the blood eighteen gallons of good red wine, which was contained in its belly; the head you cut off is the whore my mother, and the whole affair is gone to the devil." "What does the lunatic mean, said Don Quixote, are you in your right senses, Sancho?" "Rise, sir, resumed the squire, and see what a fine piece of work you have made, and what a score you have run. You shall behold the queen converted into a private lady called Dorothea, with many other strange events, at which, if you take them right, you will be hugely astonished." "I shall not wonder at any thing of that kind, replied his master: for thou may'st remember, the last time we were in this house, I told thee that every incident which happened was conducted and brought about by enchantment; so that we need not be surprised if the same power should prevail at present." "I should be of your worship's opinion, answered Sancho, if my blanketting had been of the same stamp: but that was not the case; for it was really and truly a substantial tossing. This very innkeeper, whom we saw to-day, held a corner of the blanket, and canted me into the air with great strength and nimbleness, passing a thousand waggish jokes, and laughing at me all the while; from whence I concluded, simple and sinner as I am, that as I knew their persons, there was no enchantment in the case, but abundance of bruising and bad fortune." "Well, Heaven will make thee amends, said the knight: mean

mean while, reach me my cloaths; for I want to go forth, and examine those events and transformations which thou hast mentioned."

While Sancho was helping him to dress, the curate gave Don Fernando and his company an account of Don Quixote's madness, and the artifice they had used to disengage him from the poor rock to which he imagined himself exiled by the disdain of his mistress. He also recounted all those adventures that Sancho had imparted to him, at which they were not a little surprised and laughed immoderately; agreeing in opinion with every body who knew the knight, that it was the strangest extravagance that ever entered a disturbed imagination. The priest, moreover, observed, that since the good fortune of Dorothea obstructed the progress of their design, there was a necessity for inventing another plan that should bring him home to his own house. Cardenio proposed that they should prosecute the scheme they had already begun; and Lucinda would act and represent the part of Dorothea. "No, said Don Fernando, that must not be, Dorothea shall still proceed with her own invention: for, as it cannot be far from hence to the habitation of that honest gentleman, I shall be glad to contribute towards his cure." And when he understood that they should arrive in two days at his house; "Were it farther off, said he, I should go with pleasure to assist in such a laudable design."

At that instant Don Quixote came forth, armed at all points with Mambrino's helmet, battered as it was, upon his head, his shield braced upon his arm, and his pole or lance in his hand. Don Fernando and his companions were amazed at this strange apparition, when they beheld such a rueful length of face, so withered and tawny; together with his illsorted armour, and the solemnity of his gait. They gazed upon him, in silent expectation of what he would say; while he,

with

with infinite gravity of aspect, fixing his eyes upon Dorothea, accosted her in these words: "Fair lady, I am informed by this my squire, that your greatness is annihilated, and your quality undone, by being changed from your former rank of queen and sovereign princess, into the condition of a private damsel. If this hath been done by the necromancy of the king your father, who is, perhaps, afraid that I should not be able to give you the assistance required; I say, he neither knows, nor ever did know, the half of that art which he professeth; and that he is but little conversant in the history of chivalry; for had he read and perused it with such leisure and attention as I have bestowed upon that subject, he would have found that, on every occasion, knights of much less reputation than I possess, have atchieved much more difficult enterprizes than this; it being a matter of small moment to kill a pitiful giant, let him be as arrogant as he will: for not many hours ago, I saw myself engaged with one—but I chuse to be silent, rather than have my veracity called in question, though time, that unmasks all things, will shew, when we least expect it.—"

"That you was engaged with wine bags, and not with a giant," cried the innkeeper, who was silenced by Don Fernando, and forbid to interrupt the knights discourse, in any shape whatever. So that Don Quixote proceeded, saying, "In fine, if the father of you disinherited highness hath performed this metamorphosis on your person, for the causes I have mentioned, I hope you will give no credit to such considerations, for there is no danger upon earth through which my sword will not open a way, and by laying the head of your adversary in the dust, in a few days, invest yours with that crown to which you have an undoubted right."

Here Don Quixote left off speaking, in expectation
of

of a reply from the princess, who knowing it was Don Fernando's pleasure that she should continue the deceit, until the knight could be brought back to his own house, answered with equal gravity and grace. "Whosoever hath told you, most valiant Knight of the Rueful Countenance, that I am changed and transformed from what I was, has not adhered to the truth in his information: indeed I am somewhat changed by certain fortunate events which have happened even beyond my own expectation; but nevertheless, I have not ceased to be what I was, nor altered that resolution which I have always maintained, of taking the advantage of your valiant and invincible arm. Wherefore, dear sir, be so good as to do justice to the honour of the father who begat me, and look upon him as a man of sagacity and foresight; since by the science he possessed, he found such an easy and effectual path to the cure of my misfortune: for I firmly believe, that were it not for you, I should not now be so happy as I am, as the greatest part of these gentlemen can truly witness. Nothing then remains, but that we set out to-morrow, because we could not propose to travel far to-day; and as for the success on which my hopes are built, I leave it entirely to God and the worth of your heroic breast."

Don Quixote hearing these words, turned to Sancho, in the most violent indignation, saying, "I protest, firrah! you are the most malicious little slanderer in Spain. Say, you rascal—you vagabond! did not you tell me just now, that the princess was transformed into a private gentlewoman called Dorothea; and that the head, which I know I cut from the giant's shoulders was the whore your mother: with many more foolish particulars, which threw me into the greatest confusion that ever I felt since I was born? By heaven! (here he turned up his eyes and bit his lips) I have a strong inclination to commit such slaughter

laughter
ing to
tend k

"I
cho, I
chang
the gi
other
snail a
are sli
whole
of the
convic
here,
As to
that t
it con
"I to
art di
nough
nothin
prince
till to
ced:
conve
a bod
be wit
doubt
he ha
to ser
have
opinio
* In
† Li
phrase
my pa
his clo
taphor

slaughter upon thee, as will be an * instructive warning to all the lying squires who shall henceforward attend knights-errant in the course of their adventures."

"Pray be pacified, good your worship, cried Sancho, I may possibly be deceived in what concerns the change of my lady princess Micomicona; but as to the giant's head being a wine bag, and the blood no other than good red wine, I am not mistaken, as I shall answer to God! for the skins that were flashed are still to be seen by your worship's bed-side, and the whole room is flooded with the wine. But the proof of the pudding is in the † eating of it: you will be convinced when Mr What-dye-call him, our landlord here, makes out a bill of the damage he has suffered. As to the rest, I am rejoiced from my soul, to find that the queen's majesty is the same as usual; because it concerns me as well as any other neighbour's child."

"I tell thee, Sancho, replied Don Quixote, that thou art distracted; forgive me, that is enough." "Enough in all conscience, said Don Fernando, there is nothing more to be said on this subject. I think the princess judges very prudently in deferring her journey till to morrow; because the day is already far advanced: let us therefore spend this night in agreeable conversation, and at the approach of day, we will in a body attend the gallant Don Quixote, that we may be witnesses of the unheard-of exploits which he will doubtless perform in the course of this vast enterprize he hath undertaken." "It is my duty and resolution to serve and attend you, answered the knight: and I have the most grateful sense of your favour and good opinion, which I shall endeavour to justify, though

* In the original, As will put salt in the scull.

† Literally, You shall see when the eggs are fried. A phrase alluding to the story of a thief, who having stole a frying-pan, and being asked by the owner what he carried under his cloak? replied, You will see when the eggs are fried. Metaphorically, Time will discover.

it should cost me my life, or even more—if more I can pay.

Many compliments and proffers of service passed between Don Fernando and Don Quixote; but they were interrupted by the arrival of a traveller; who, by his garb, seemed to be a Christian slave, lately escaped from Barbary; for he was clad in a coat of blue cloth, wanting a collar, with short skirts and half sleeves; his breeches and cap were of the same stuff; and he wore date-coloured buskins; with a Moorish scymitar slung in a shoulder-belt, across his breast. He was followed by a woman dressed in the Moorish habit, mounted upon an ass; with a veil over her face, a brocaded bonnet on her head, and a mantle that flowed from her shoulders to her heels. The man was robust, and well-proportioned, seemingly turned of forty, with a brownish complexion, large whiskers, and a well furnished beard: in short, his mien was so genteel, that if he had been properly dressed, they would have taken him for a man of birth and quality.

Soon as he entered the gate, he called for a private apartment, and seemed very much concerned when he understood that all the rooms of the inn were engaged: however, he went to the lady in Moorish dress and lifted her off in his arms. Upon which Lucinda, Dorothea, the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes flocked around her, their curiosity being excited by the novelty of the garb, which none of them had ever seen before; and Dorothea, who was always good humoured, mannerly, and discreet, concluding that both she and her conductor were chagrined at their want of a chamber, spoke to her thus: "Be not uneasy, madam, at your want of accommodation here; it is the inconvenience of almost all inns; but if you will be pleased to partake with us, pointing to Lucinda, perhaps you will find that, in the course of your journey,

four
fare
rising
sing
bow
jectu
could
H
in fo
made
no re
"La
Span
count
quell
no q
of cu
lodg
tine
go
lex w
don
I retu
your
such p
most c
na," f
By her
she is
body a
Moor,
loags a
"then
"She h
she quit
hitherto
her life,
VOL.

journey, you have been fain to put up with harder fare." The veiled lady made no answer, but only rising from her seat, signified her thanks, by crossing her hands upon her bosom, bending her body and bowing her head: so that from her silence, they conjectured that she must be a native Moor, and that she could not speak any Christian language.

Her attendant, who had hitherto been employed in something else, perceiving that the company had made a circle about his companion, who could make no replies to their interrogations, said to them, "Ladies, this young woman understands little or no Spanish, and speaks no language but that of her own country; so that she is incapable of answering any questions you may have asked." "We have asked no questions, said Lucinda, but only made her an offer of our company, for this night, with a share of our lodging, and what accommodation is to be had; and thus we tender with that hearty good will which obliges us to serve all strangers, especially those of our own sex who stand in need of our assistance." "Dear Madam, replied the conductor, in her name and in my own I return you a thousand thanks; and highly esteem your proffered favour, which on this occasion, and from such persons as your appearance proclaims you to be, must certainly be very kind and condescending." "Signor," said Dorothea, "is this lady Christian or Moor? By her silence and her dress, we are induced to believe she is not what we could wish her to be." "In her body and dress," replied the stranger. "she is a Moor, but altogether a Christian in her soul; for she longs ardently to be a professed convert to our faith." "Then she is not baptized," resumed Lucinda. "She has had no opportunity, said the captive, since she quitted Algiers, which is her native country; and hitherto hath never been in such imminent danger of her life, as to make it necessary, before she is instruct-

ed in all the ceremonies enjoined by our holy mother church : but, if it please Heaven, she shall be baptized very soon, with decency suitable to the quality of her person, which is greater than either her dress or mine seems to declare."

This intimation raised the curiosity of all the spectators, to know who this Moor and captive were ; but nobody chose to ask the question at that time, which seemed more proper for reposing themselves than relating the history of their lives. Dorothea taking her by the hand, seated the stranger close by her side, and intreated her to take off the veil : she looked at her conductor, as if she wanted to know what the lady desired, and he told her in Arabic, that they intreated her to be uncovered ; at the same time advising her to comply with their request. She accordingly unveiled herself, and discovered a face so amiable, that Dorothea thought her handsomer than Lucinda, who in her turn, gave her the preference to Dorothea ; and all present concluded, that if any creature upon earth could vie with them in beauty, it was this Moorish lady, who, in the opinion of some of the company, excelled them both in certain particulars. As beauty, therefore has the privilege and energy to conciliate minds and attract affections, every body present were seized with an inclination to serve and cherish the charming Moor. Don Fernando asked her name of the captive, who answered, Lela Zorayda : this she no sooner heard, than understanding the question which had been put to the christian, she pronounced with great eagerness and sweetness of concern, " No, no, Zorayda ; Maria, Maria ; " signifying that her name was Maria, and not Zorayda. these words, with the affecting manner in which they were expressed, brought tears from the eyes of some of the hearers, especially the women, who are naturally tender and compassionate, Lucinda embraced her affectionately, saying,

ing, "Yes, yes, Maria, Maria:" and to this the Moor replied, "Yes, yes, Maria——Zorayda Macange;" which, in the Arabic, signifies No.

Mean while it grew late, and the innkeeper, by order of Don Fernando's attendants, prepared, with great diligence and care, as good a repast as he could possibly provide: so that, when supper time arrived, they sat down altogether at a long hall table; for there was neither a round nor square one in the house: they forced the head and principal seat, in spite of all his excuses, on Don Quixote, who desired that the princess Micomicona might sit by the side of her protector: next to her, Lucinda and Zorayda placed themselves, being fronted by Fernando and Cardenio, at whose left hand sat the captive and the other gentlemen, while the curate and the barber took their station close to the ladies. In this manner they supped with vast satisfaction, which was still increased, when Don Quixote, leaving off eating, and inspired by the same spirit that moved him to harangue among the goatherds, began the following dissertation: "Verily, gentlemen, if it be duly considered, great and unexpected events are seen by those who profess the order of knight-errantry. What inhabitant of this earth, if they should now enter the gates of this castle, and behold us seated in this manner, could conceive or credit that we are what we are? Who could imagine, that this lady on my right hand is the great queen whom we all know her to be, and that I am the Knight of the Rueful Countenance, so celebrated by the voice of Fame? Now there is no manner of doubt, that this exercise and art exceeds all others hitherto invented by man, and that it ought to be more esteemed, because it is more exposed to danger. Away with those who give letters the preference over arms: I affirm, that such people, whosoever they are, know not what they say; for the sole reason to which they

adhere, in this decision, is, that the labour of the body is exceeded by that of the mind; and that the profession of arms is altogether as corporeal as the exercise and office of a common day-labourer, that requires nothing more than bodily strength; as if that which is called foldiership, by us who profess it, did not include acts of valour which none but persons of uncommon genius could execute: or as if the toil of a warrior who has the charge of an army, or commands in a town that is besieged, doth not affect the mind as well as the body: is it to be supposed, that by mere corporeal strength, he can penetrate and discover the intention of the enemy? To anticipate designs, baffle stratagems, surmount difficulties, and prevent the mischief that is to be dreaded, are all efforts of the understanding, in which the body hath no share: if the profession of arms, therefore, requires genius, as well as that of letters; let us see which of the two requires most mental toil: and this question may be determined, by considering the end and aim of each; for that occupation deserves the highest esteem, which hath the noblest purpose in view—the end and scope of letters. I speak not here of that divine learning, whose aim is to raise and conduct the soul to heaven; to an end so infinite, no intention whatever can be compared: I speak of human learning, the ultimate end of which is to regulate distributive justice, render to every one his due, and to understand and protect the equitable laws; an aim certainly generous, and highly commendable? yet not so deserving of the most sublime praise as the profession of arms, the object and the end of which is peace, the greatest good that mortals can enjoy; for the first blessed news which this world and mankind heard, were those pronounced by the angels, on that night which was our day, when they sung in the air, ‘Glory be to God on high, and on earth peace and good-will towards men!’ and the
salutation,

glutation, which the best master either in heaven or upon earth, taught his adherents and favourites; which was to say when they entered any house, 'Peace be to this house!' Nay, he himself, at different times, said, 'My peace I give unto you. My peace I leave with you. Peace be among you.' A jewel and legacy well worthy of him who left it! a jewel, without which there can be no felicity, either on earth or in heaven! This peace is the genuine aim of war; for arms and war are the same; and this being taken for granted, the end of war is nobler than that of learning: wherefore, let us next consider the bodily toil sustained by each, that we may see on which side the balance lies, in that particular."

In this sensible manner did Don Quixote continue his discourse, from which nobody that heard him could distinguish that he was mad: on the contrary, his audience consisting chiefly of gentlemen, to which title the profession of arms is annexed, they listened with great pleasure, while he proceeded thus:

"The hardships of a student, I say, are these; first of all, poverty (not that all students are poor, but that we may suppose the worst that can happen); and when I have named his indigence, the whole of his misfortune is mentioned; for he that is poor can enjoy nothing that is good, but must endure necessity in all its forms, sometimes hunger, sometimes cold, sometimes nakedness, and often all three together: nevertheless, his necessity is not so great, but that he eats, though perhaps later than usual, or, though he may feed upon the leavings of the rich, or, which is the greatest misery to which a scholar can be reduced, go-a-sopping*, as they term it: then they are always admitted to some charitable person's fire-side or chimney-corner, where, if they cannot warm themselves effectually, they may at least defy the cold; and at

* Alluding to the charity given at the gates of monasteries.

night they sleep under cover. I need not descend to minute particulars, such as want of linen, scarcity of shoes, slimy and thread bare clothes, nor the surfeits which they so eagerly incur, when their good fortune sets a plentiful table in their way. By this path, rough and difficult as I have already described it, after many tumbings, slidings, risings and fallings, they at last attain to the wished degree, which being gained, we have seen many who have passed with a favourable gale of fortune through these quicksands and straits of Scylla and Charybdis: I say, we have seen many such command and dictate to the world from a chair of state; their hunger being changed into satiety; their cold into refreshment; their rags into apparel; and the matts, on which they lay, to the richest damask and finest holland: a recompence which their merit most justly enjoys! but their labours, when fairly stated and compared, are infinitely short of the warrior's, as I shall now clearly demonstrate."

CHAP. XI.

The sequel of Don Quixote's curious discourse on the subjects of learning and war.

THE knight proceeded thus: "Since we began with the student, representing his poverty in all its circumstances, let us see if the soldier be more wealthy: and we shall find that poverty itself is not poorer: for he is restricted to his miserable pay, which comes always late, if ever, or to what he can plunder by force, with the imminent danger of his life and conscience; and frequently, his nakedness is such, that his slashed buff-doublet serves him instead of coat, shirt, and all other parts of apparel. In a winter campaign, while he remains in the open field, he has nothing to mitigate the severity of the cold but his own breath, which as it proceeds

proceeds from an empty place, must, I believe, be cold, contrary to all the rules of nature : but stay till the approach of night, when it is to be hoped, his bed will make amends for all these inconveniencies ; and this, if it be not his own fault, will never offend in point of narrowness, for he may measure as many feet of ground as he thinks sufficient, and there tumble about at pleasure, without any danger of discomposing the sheets : then instead of the day and hour of receiving the degrees of his art, comes the day of battle, in which his head is adorned with the doctoral toisile, made in form of a pledge, to stuff the wound made by some ball, which, perhaps hath gone through his temples, or left him maimed of a leg or arm : and even if this should not happen, but merciful Heaven guard and preserve him safe and sound, he continues as poor as ever ; he must risk himself in several more rencounters and battles, and be victorious in each, before his circumstances be bettered ; but these miracles rarely happen. Tell me, gentlemen, have you considered what a small proportion those who make their fortunes by war bear to those who perish in the field ? Doubtless, you must answer, that there is no sort of comparison ; that the slain are scarce to be numbered, while the living, who are recompensed for their services, may be comprehended within three figures of * arithmetic. The case of the learned is quite the reverse † ; for one

* i. e. Do not amount to 1000, which is a number expressed by four figures.

† The literal translation is, " For, from the skirts (for I would not mention the sleeves)," the Spaniards, instead of the English phrase, by Hook or by Crook, use this of " From the sleeves or the skirts ;" derived from the practice of tailors, who are supposed to cabbage from those parts of the habit in which there is the greatest quantity of cloth : but the knight's exception of sleeves, on this occasion, seems to have proceeded from a supposition that poor scholars are generally provided for in the church, and consequently wear cassocks, which descend to the heels.

way

way or another, they are all provided ; so that, tho' the toil of a soldier is greater, his reward is much less. To this observation it may be replied, that it is far more easy to reward two thousand scholars than thirty thousand soldiers ; for the first are recompensed with offices which must, of course, be bestowed on people of their profession ; whereas, the others can enjoy no reward, except a share of the property belonging to their master whom they serve ; even this impossibility strengthens my asseveration.

But waving that consideration, which would lead us into a most intricate labyrinth, let us return to the pre eminence which arms have over learning, a point hitherto undecided ; of such force are the reasons alleged on both sides of the question : one of which in favour of the last, is, that without letters, the profession of arms could not be supported, because there are laws to which war itself is subject ; and all laws fall within the province of letters and learned men. To this observation the partizans of the other opinion reply, that no laws could be maintained without arms, which preserve the constitution, defend kingdoms, guard cities, scour the highways, and clear the seas of the piratical corsairs. In short, that without arms, all republics, kingdoms, monarchies, cities, journies by land, and voyages by sea, would be exposed to the horror and confusion that attend unbridled war, while it continues in all its licentious privilege and force. It is a general and established maxim, that every thing ought to be esteemed in proportion to what it costs : now, to become eminent in letters costs the student much time, watching, hunger, nakedness, vertigoes, indigestion, and their consequences, which are in part mentioned above : but to acquire, in a regular manner, the character of a good soldier, a man must undergo all these inconveni-

encies

encies in an incomparably greater degree ; because he is every moment in danger of losing his life. What fear of indigence and poverty can seize and harass the student's apprehension, equal to that which must possess the soldier besieged in a fortress, who being placed centinel or guard in some ravelin or * cavalier, perceives the enemy at work undermining the very spot whereon he stands ; without daring to stir from his post, or avoid the danger by which he is so imminently threatened ? All he can do, is to give notice of what passes to his captain, who must endeavour to baffle the foe by some countermine, while he remains upon the place in terror and expectation of being suddenly whirled aloft into the clouds without wings, and of falling thence headlong into the profound abyss : if this danger seems inconsiderable, let us see whether it be equalled or exceeded in the grappling of two galleys, by their prows, in the midst of the extended ocean : when they are locked and fastened into each other, and the soldiers hath not an inch more than two feet of the beak to stand upon, while he sees himself threatened and opposed by as many ministers of death, as there are cannon in the enemy's vessel, and these within a spear's length of his body ; and is sensible, that if his feet should chance to slip, he would instantly visit the profound bosom of the sea : yet, nevertheless, with an intrepid heart, incited and transported by honour, he bears the brunt of their whole artillery, and endeavours by that narrow passage to board the adverse vessel : and, what is very much to be admired, is, that as soon as one falls, never to rise again till the general resurrection, another occupies his place, and should he also drop into the sea, which like an enemy gapes to devour him, another

* Cavalier is an artificial mount raised in a fortress for the convenience of scouring a field, or opposing a commanding work of the enemy.

and another still succeeds, without the smallest intermission; an instance of gallantry and boldness, the greatest to be found in all the extremities of war. Happy were the ages past, while strangers to those infernal instruments of artillery, the author of which is, I firmly believe, now in hell, enjoying the reward of his diabolical invention, that puts it in the power of an infamous coward to deprive the most valiant cavalier of life; for often, in the heat of that courage and resolution that fires and animates the gallant breast, there comes a random ball, how or from whence no man can tell, shot off, perhaps, by one that fled and was afraid at the flash of his own accursed machine, and in an instant, puts an end to the schemes and existence of a man who deserved to live for ages. This very consideration makes me almost own, that I am sorry for having chosen this profession of a knight-errant in this detestable age: for tho' no danger can daunt my resolution, it gives me some uneasiness to think that powder and shot may deprive me of the opportunity of making myself famous and renowned through the whole globe, for the valour of my arm, and the keenness of my sword: but let the will of Heaven be fulfilled; if I accomplish my aim, I shall be more esteemed, because I have faced more danger than ever was incurred by the knights-errant in ages past."

While the rest of the company were employed in eating, this long harangue was uttered by Don Quixote, who never thought of swallowing a morsel: that Sancho frequently put him in mind of eating his supper, observing, that he would afterwards have time enough to say what he pleased. The hearers were moved with fresh concern, at seeing a man who, in every other subject, seemed to have a large share of sense and discernment, lose it so irrecoverably, whenever the discourse turned upon the cursed mischievous theme of chivalry. The curate observed, that there was a

great

great deal of reason in what he had advanced in favour of arms; and that he himself, tho' a graduate, consequently a man of letters, was entirely of the knight's opinion.

Supper being ended, and the table uncovered, when the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes were lused in sitting up the garret of Don Quixote de la Mancha, in which it was determined the three ladies should pass the night by themselves; Don Fernando intreated the captive to recount the story of his life, which he imagined must be both uncommon and entertaining, from the specimen they had already seen, in his arriving thus equipped, in company with the fair Zorayda. To this request the stranger answered, that he would willingly obey his command, though he was afraid the company would not find the relation to their liking; but nevertheless, rather than fail in point of obedience, he was ready to make it. The curate and whole company thanked him for his complaisance, and joined in the request: and he seeing himself besought by so many, said there was no occasion for intreaties, where they might so effectually command: "Lend me your attention therefore, and you shall hear a true story, perhaps unequalled by those fictions which are usually adorned with all the curious and profound artifice of composition."

At this preamble, all present adjusted and composed themselves; and he perceiving the general silence in which they waited for the performance of his promise, began in this manner, with a grave and agreeable voice,

CHAP. XII.

In which the captive recounts his life and adventures.

IN a certain place among the mountains of Leon, my family had its origin; more beholden to the liberality of nature than to the smiles of fortune: tho' amidst the narrowness of circumstances, which prevails in that country, my father had the reputation of being rich, and really was so, had he possessed the art of preserving, as he practised the means of spending his estate. This liberal and profuse disposition was owing to his having been a soldier in his youth: the army being a school in which the miser becomes generous, and the benevolent man grows prodigal: for a covetous soldier is a monster which is rarely seen. My father exceeded the bounds of liberality, and bordered upon those of prodigality; a disposition of very little service to a married man, who has children to succeed him in rank as well as name: and he had no less than three; all of them sons, already at an age to choose for themselves. The old gentleman finding it impossible, as he said, to resist the bent of his inclination, was resolved to deprive himself of the means that induced and enabled him to spend so lavishly, by giving up his estate; as, without money, Alexander himself must have seemed frugal.

One day, therefore, calling us all three together into his chamber, he delivered himself in these or the like words; "Sons, to say I love you, is no more than to say and know you are my own children: though it would seem that I do not love you, by my squandering away the fortune which is your due: but that you may be henceforward convinced that I love you like a true parent, rather than seek your destruc-

tion

tion
which
with
an ag
to pi
may
tentio
three
shares
and th
and fi
the da
portion
low th
ing in
all pro
tated
mean,
church
express
his for
church
the cou
king's
mentio
would f
serve hi
obtain a
cannot
and rep
I will
without
see by n
willing
ed?" f
eldest.
his estate
Vol.

tion like a stepfather, I am resolved to execute a plan which I have formed a good while ago, and digested with the most mature deliberation. You are now of an age to chuse settlements for yourselves, or at least to pitch upon employments which, in your riper years, may conduce to your honour and advantage. My intention is to divide my estate into four equal parts, three of which you shall receive among you in equal shares, without the least difference or distinction; and the fourth I will reserve for my own sustenance and support while Heaven will be pleased to protract the days of my life. But after you have received your portions, I should be glad to find you inclined to follow the paths which I shall propose. We have a saying in Spain, which, I believe, is very true, as indeed all proverbs are, because they are short sentences dictated by long and sage experience: that which I mean, contains no more than these words: 'The church, the court, or the sea;' as if it more fully expressed the following advice. He that would make his fortune, ought either to dedicate his time to the church, go to sea as a merchant, or attach himself to the court: for it is commonly observed, that 'The king's crumb is worth the baron's batch.' This I mention, because I wish and desire that one of you would follow letters, another merchandize, and a third serve his sovereign in the field, since it is difficult to obtain an office at court: and although much wealth cannot be expected, there is a great deal of valour and reputation to be acquired in war. In eight days I will give each of you his share, in ready money, without defrauding you of one farthing, as you will see by my distribution. Tell me, therefore, if you are willing to follow my advice in what I have proposed?" said my father, addressing himself to me as the eldest. After having dissuaded him from parting with his estate, and desired him to spend as much of it as he

pleased, observing, that we were young men, and capable of making our own fortunes, I concluded with saying, I would obey his will, and, for my own part, chuse to serve God and my king, in adhering to the exercise of arms. My second brother made the same offer, proposing to set sail for the Indies, and employ his stock of ready money in traffic. The youngest, and I believe the wisest, said, he would qualify himself for the church, by going and finishing his studies at Salamanca.

We having thus agreed in the choice of our different employments, our father embraced us all affectionately, and within the time he had proposed, performed his promise of giving us our portions, which, to the best of my remembrance, amounted to three thousand ducats each: for an uncle of ours paid ready money for the whole estate, that it might not be alienated from the family. In one day, all three took leave of our worthy father, when I, thinking it a piece of inhumanity to leave him so straitened in his old age, prevailed upon him to accept two thousand of the three I had received, as the remainder was sufficient to accommodate me with all the necessaries of a soldier. Each of my brothers, induced by my example, gave him back one third of their shares, so that he remained possessed of four thousand ducats in cash, and the value of three thousand more in land, which he did not chuse to sell. At length, I say, we took leave of him, and that uncle whom I have mentioned, not without great concern and many tears on all sides; they charging us to seize every opportunity of making them acquainted with our adventures, either in prosperity or adversity. Having given this promise, and received their embraces and blessing, one took the road to Salamanca, another went to Sevil, and I set out for Alicant, where I understood there was a ship taking in a lading of wool for Genoa. Two and

twenty years are now elapsed since I left my father's house; and during all that time, though I have written several letters, I never received the least information concerning him or my brothers. What hath happened to myself within that period I will now briefly relate.

Embarking at Alicant, I had a favourable passage to Genoa, from whence I went to Milan, where I provided myself with arms and some gay military furniture. Then I departed for Piedmont, with a resolution of enlisting in the service; and being upon the road to Alexandria de la Paglia, was informed that the great duke of Alva was on his march into Flanders. Upon receiving this intimation, I changed my design, attended him to the Low Countries, served in all his campaigns, and was present at the death of the counts Egmont and Horn. There I obtained an ensign's commission in the company of a famous captain of Guadalajara, whose name was Diego de Urbina: but after I had been some time in Flanders, the news arrived of the league between his holiness Pope Pius the fifth of happy memory and the Spanish monarchy, against their common enemy the Turk, who about that time had, by means of his fleet, made a conquest of the famous island of Cyprus, which was under the dominion of the Venetians: a most lamentable and unfortunate loss. It was certainly known that the most serene Don John of Austria, natural brother to our good king Philip, was to be general of this league; and the vast preparations for this war were publicly reported. All these rumours raised and excited within me the desire and resolution of being present in a campaign of such expectation; and though I had strong hopes, and indeed certain promises of being promoted to the rank of a captain, as soon as a vacancy should happen, I chose to quit that prospect, and go, as I actually did, to Italy; and

luckily for me, Don John of Austria was then at Genoa, just going to embark for Naples, in order to join the Venetian fleet, which he afterwards found at Messina. In short, I served in that most happy campaign, and was advanced to the rank of captain of foot, which honourable post I obtained more by good fortune than merit : and that day which was so fortunate for Christendom, on which the world was convinced of the error they had espoused in believing the Turks invincible by sea ; on that day, I say, when the Ottoman pride and insolence was humbled and broke, among so many happy Christians there present (and sure those who fell were happier than the living victors !) I alone was unfortunate ; for instead of receiving a naval crown, which would have been my reward had I lived in the Roman ages, on the night that succeeded that glorious day, I found myself a captive loaded with chains : and this was the cause of my misfortune : Uchali king of Algiers, a bold and fortunate corsair, having attacked and mastered the capitan galley of Malta, in which there remained only three knights alive, and these desperately wounded ; the vessel commanded by John Andrea Doria, in which my company was stationed, hastened to her relief, and I doing my duty on that occasion, leaped into the enemy's ship, which disengaging herself immediately from our galley that was grappled with her, my soldiers were prevented from following their officer, and I found myself alone among my foes, whom, by reason of their numbers, I could not resist ; therefore was obliged to submit, after having been almost covered over with wounds ; and Uchali, as you have heard, gentlemen, having saved himself with his whole squadron, I remained his prisoner, the only sad person amidst the general joy, and captive among so many that were set free ; for full fifteen thousand Christians who came into the action,

tion, chained to the Turkish oars, that day recovered their long-wished-for liberty.

I was carried to Constantinople, where Selim the Grand Turk created my master general of the sea, for having done his duty in the battle, and as a proof of his valour, brought off the high standard of Malta. Next year, which was that of seventy-two, I rowed in the capitan galley of the three lanterns, at Navarino, where I saw and observed the Christians lose the opportunity of taking the whole Turkish fleet in the harbour; for all the Levantines and Janizaries belonging to it laid their account with being attacked in port, and had actually got in readiness their knapsacks and passamaques, which are a kind of shoes, in order to go on shore, and seek their safety in flight, without waiting for the assault; such was the consternation that prevailed among them! but Heaven ordained things to happen in another manner, not through any error or neglect of the general who commanded the expedition, but on account of the sins of Christendom, it being the will and permission of God that we should never want executioners to chastise us. In short, Uchali retreated to Modon, which is an island almost contiguous to Navarino, where he disembarked his men, fortified the mouth of the harbour, and remained until Don John set sail on his return. In this expedition, the galley called the Prize, commanded by a son of the famous corsair Barbarossa, was taken by the capitan galley of Naples, called the She-wolf, the commander of which was that thunderbolt of war, that father of his soldiers, that fortunate and invincible chief, Don Alvaro de Basan, marquis of Santa Cruz; and I cannot help mentioning what happened at the taking of this prize: the son of Barbarossa was so cruel, and treated his captives so inhumanly, that when the rowers perceived the She-wolf ready to board, and in a fair way of taking her, they

quitted their oars all at once, and seizing the captain, who stood upon the * stentrel, calling to them to row lustily, they tossed him forwards from bench to bench, and bit him so severely as he went along, that, before he passed the main-mast, his soul passed into hell. Such was his barbarity, as I have already observed, and such the revenge which their hatred to him insured!

We returned to Constantinople, and during the following year, which was seventy-three, understood that Don John had taken Tunis, wrested that whole kingdom from the Turks, and put Muley Hamet in possession of the whole; thus cutting off all the hopes of a restoration from Muley Hamida, the most valiant and most cruel Moor of his time. The Grand Signor was deeply affected with this loss, and practising that sagacity which is peculiar to all those of his family, clapt up a peace with the Venetians, who were much more desirous of it than he. Next year, being seventy-four, he attacked the goleta and fort, which Don John had left half-finished, near Tunis: and on all these occasions I was present, being tied to the oar, without the least hope of freedom, especially by ransom; for I was resolved not to write to my father an account of my misfortune. At length, the goleta and fort were both lost, having being besieged by seventy-five thousand Turkish soldiers, regularly paid, and upwards of four hundred thousand Moors and Arabs from the other parts of Africa; this multitude being provided with a vast quantity of warlike stores and ammunition, and attended with such a number of pioneers, that by throwing handfuls of earth, they might have covered both the places they came to besiege. The goleta, which had been counted impregnable, was first taken: not through any fault of the besieged, who per-

* The stentrel, or estanterol, is a post that supports the awning of the poop.

formed all that men could do in its defence ; but because experience shewed that trenches could be made with ease in that loose sand, under which, though water was commonly found at the depth of two spans, the Turks, at that time, dug as many fathoms, without finding one drop ; and so filling a vast number of sacks, raised their works so high as to overlook the fort ; then mounting this cavalier with cannon, kept such a firing as rendered it impossible for the garrison to make any longer defence. It was a common opinion, that our troops ought not to have shut themselves up in the goleta, but opposed the disembarkation in the plain : however, those who talk in that manner, speak at random, and must be persons of small experience in such affairs, for if the whole garrison in both places, scarce amounted to seven thousand soldiers, how could such a small number, though ever so valiant, take the field, and, at the same time, defend the forts against such a multitude of foes ? And how could the forts be possibly maintained without supplies, in an enemy's country, when they were hemmed in by such a numerous and obstinate army ? But others thought, and I am of the same opinion, that Heaven manifested a particular grace and favour to Spain, in permitting them to destroy that rendezvous and pretence of mischief, that sink, sponge, and devourer of infinite sums of money, which were there unprofitably spent, without serving any other purpose than that of preserving the memory of its being the most happy conquest of the invincible Charles the Vth : as if it was necessary for those stones to support his fame, which is already immortal. The fort was also yielded ; though the Turks won it by inches ; for the garrison behaved with such gallantry and resolution, that in two and twenty general assaults, the enemy lost upwards of twenty five thousand men ; and of the three hundred Spanish soldiers that remained alive, they did

not make one prisoner who had not been wounded during the siege: a clear and certain proof of the obstinate valour with which the places were defended. A small fort, or tower, that stood in the middle of the lake, under the command of Don Juan Zanoquera, a Valentian knight and celebrated soldier, surrendered upon terms: but Don Pedro Puertocarrero, general of the goleta, was made prisoner; and though he did all that man could do, in defence of the place, he was so deeply affected by the loss of it, that he died of grief on the road to Constantinople, whither they were carrying him captive. The general of the fort, whose name was Gabrio Cerbellon, a Milanese gentleman, a great engineer and excellent soldier, was likewise taken prisoner; and in these two forts perished many persons of note, among whom was one Pagan d'Oria, a knight of St John, a gentleman of a most generous disposition, as appeared from his excessive liberality to his brother, the famous Juan Andria d'Oria; and what made his death still more lamentable was, that he perished by the hands of some Arabs, to whom, seeing the fort already lost, he trusted himself, relying upon their promise to carry him, disguised in a Moorish dress, to Tabarca, which is a small port or settlement belonging to the Genoese, who fish for coral on that part of the coast; but those perfidious Arabs cut off his head, which they carried to the general of the Turkish navy, who fulfilled upon them our Castilian proverb, which imports, that though we love the treason we abhor the traitor; for it was reported that he ordered them all to be hanged, because they had not brought him alive.

Among the Christians who were taken in the fort, was one Don Pedro de Aguilar, a native of some town in Andalusia, who had been an ensign in the garrison, a soldier of great worth and rare endowments, particularly blessed with a happy talent for poetry.

This

This circumstance I mention, because it was his fate to belong to our galley, where he was my companion at the oar, and fellow slave ; and before we departed from that harbour, he composed two songs, by way of epitaph, upon the goleta and the fort. As I have them both by heart, I believe it will not be disagreeable to the company, if I repeat them."

When the captive mentioned Don Pedro de Aguilar, Don Fernando looked at his companions, who smiled, and when the stranger was going to repeat the songs, one of the three said to him. " Before you proceed, I beg the favour to know what became of that Don Pedro de Aguilar ? " " All that I know of the matter, replied the captive, is, that after having staid two years at Constantinople, he made off in the habit of an * *arnaut*, with a Greek spy ; but I do not know whether or not he obtained his liberty ; though I believe he succeeded ; for about a year after, I saw the same Greek at Constantinople ; but I had not an opportunity to enquire about the success of their scheme." " Then I can satisfy you in that particular, resumed the cavalier ; Don Pedro is my brother, and now lives at home, in good health and easy circumstances, blessed with a wife and three hopeful sons." " Thanks be to God for the great mercies bestowed upon him ! answered the captive ; for in my opinion, there is no happiness on earth equal to that of liberty regained." " Besides, said the gentleman, I retain in my memory the songs which my brother composed." " Be so good then, replied the stranger, as to entertain the company with them ; for, doubtless, you can repeat them more perfectly than I can." " With all my heart, said the cavalier : that upon the goleta runs thus."

* A Dalmatian trooper.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

The continuation of the captive's history.

I.

YE happy shades whose deeds renown'd
Have freed you from encumb'ring clay;
From this low scene where woes abound,
Ascending to eternal day.

II.

With glorious zeal your bosoms glow'd,
Your bodies brav'd excessive toil:
Your blood with that of Pagans flow'd
To drench the hostile barren soil.

III.

Your lives, but not your courage fail'd,
Death seal'd your just victorious claim:
Enjoy, still honour'd and bewail'd,
Immortal happiness and fame.

"These are the very words which I remember,"
said the captive. "And if my memory does not fail
me, replied the gentleman, the other upon the spot is
this."

I.

Lo! from yon ruins on the desert plain,
Oppress'd with numbers in th' unequal fight,
Three thousand souls of christian warriors slain,
To happier regions wing'd their joyous flight.

II.

Yet, not before in vain they had essay'd
The force and vigour of their dauntless arms;
'Till wearied and reduc'd, though undismay'd,
They welcom'd death encompass'd with alarms.

III.

III.

On Afric's coast, as records tell,
 The scene of past and present woes,
 More valiant bodies never fell,
 More spotless spirits never rose.

The songs were not disliked, and the captive rejoicing at the good fortune of his comrade, proceeded thus in his narration :

"The goleta and forts being taken, the Turks ordered the first to be dismantled, the other being quite demolished before it was surrendered ; and that this might be done with the less trouble and greater dispatch, it was undermined in three parts ; but they could by no means blow up the old walls, which seemed to be the weakest part, while that which was executed by Fratin, was destroyed with great facility. In short, the victorious fleet returned in triumph to Constantinople, where, in a few months, happened the death of my master Uchali, who went by the name of Uchali Fartax, which, in the language of that country, signifies the scabby renegado ; for such he actually was, and it is a custom among the Turks, to bestow epithets upon people, derived either from some defect or virtue inherent in them : this method they practise, because they have but four families distinguished by particular names, and these are descended from the house of Ottoman : so that the rest, as I have observed, adapt some appellation either from the blemishes of the body, or the virtues of the mind. This leper, therefore, tugged at the oar, during fourteen years, as slave to the Grand Signor ; and when he was turned of thirty-four apostatized, out of resentment against a Turk, who struck him at the oar, renouncing his religion, that he might be able to revenge the affront. Such was his gallantry and conduct, that without practising those vile steps and methods by which

which the Sultan's favourites are raised, he was promoted to the throne of Algiers, and afterwards created general at sea, which is the third post in the empire. He was a native of Calabria, a man of good morals, and behaved with great humanity to his slaves, who, to the number of three thousand, were at his death, in consequence of his last will, divided between his renegadoes, and the Grand Signor, who is also coheir with the children of all his deceased subjects. I fell to the share of a Venetian, who had been a common sailor, when he was taken; and Uchali had such an affection for him, that he enjoyed the greatest share of his favour, and became the most cruel renegado that ever was known. This man, whose name was Azanaga, acquired great riches, and even succeeded to the crown of Algiers, to which place I accompanied him from Constantinople, with some degree of satisfaction at the thoughts of being so near my own country; not that I intended to send home an account of my unhappy fate, but to see if fortune would not prove more favourable at Algiers than at Constantinople, where I had laid a thousand schemes for my escape, without having an opportunity of putting one of them in execution: but I was in hope of finding at Algiers some other more effectual means of obtaining that which I so ardently desired; for the hope of gaining my liberty never forsook my breast: on the contrary, when all my pains, efforts, and expectations miscarried, far from abandoning myself to despair, I endeavoured to find out some new expedient, which, though ever so frail and unsubstantial, served to support my spirits, and flatter my imagination. Thus I made shift to live within a house or prison, called a bath, in which the Turks confine the christian captives, whether belonging to the king or private persons, or of that class, which they call magazine slaves; these are the captives of the

council,

council, who serve the state in public works, and other kinds of day-labour; and find great difficulty in obtaining their freedom, because they belong to the community, and have no particular master with whom they can treat concerning their ransom, even tho' they can command money for the purpose.

In these baths, as I have already said, some private persons lodge their slaves, especially when their ransom is agreed upon; and there they remain secure, and at their ease until it arrives. Neither do the king's captives, who are to be ransomed, go out to work with the rest of the crew, except when the money is delayed; and then, that they may be induced to write with more importunity, they are sent out with the rest to cut wood, an office of no small mortification and toil. As they knew I had been a captain, I, in vain, assured them, that I had neither interest nor money; they put me into the number of those who were to be ransomed, loading me with a chain, rather to denote my condition than to secure my person; so that I spent my time in that bath, among a great many cavaliers and people of fashion, who were thus marked and designed for ransom: and though we were sometimes, nay, almost always exposed to hunger and nakedness, nothing gave us so much pain, as to hear and see, upon every occasion, the new and unheard of cruelties which my master exercised upon the christians. He was every day hanging one, impaling another, maiming a third, upon such slight occasions, frequently without any cause assigned, that the Turks themselves owned he acted thus out of mere wantonness of barbarity, as being naturally of a savage disposition, and an inveterate enemy to the whole human race. The person who used the greatest freedom with him was a Spanish soldier, called such a one de Saavedra, who, though he did many things which those people will not soon forget, in attempting to regain his liberty, he never gave

him one blow, nor ordered him once to be chastised, nor even chid him with one hasty word; and yet the least of all his pranks was sufficient, as we thought, to bring him to the stake; nay, he himself was more than once afraid of being impaled alive. If time would permit, I could here recount some of that soldier's actions, which, perhaps, might entertain and surprize you more than the relation of my own story.

But to return to the thread of my narration, just over the yard of our prison were the windows of a rich and principal Moor: but, according to the custom of the country, they were rather like peep-holes than windows, and even these covered with very thick and close lattices. One day I chanced to be on the terrace of our jail, with three of my companions, passing the time in trying which of us could leap farthest, in our shackles, the rest of the christians being gone out to work; I casually lifted up my eyes, and perceived a cane with a handkerchief tied to it, held out at these little openings I have mentioned, and waving to and fro as if by way of signal for some of us to go and catch it. This object was no sooner observed, than one of my companions ran hastily to the place that was directly under it, to see if the cane would be dropped, or what would be the consequence: but, when he arrived, it was pulled up, and moved from one side to another, as if a man should signify his dissent from any proposal, by shaking his head: when the christian returned, the cane was lowered again, with the same motion as at first; upon which another of our company tried the experiment, but succeeded no better than the first; a third went, and miscarried like the other two. Observing their disappointment, I was resolved to try my fortune also; accordingly, I had no sooner placed myself under the cane, than it was dropped, and fell down within the bath, just at

my feet. I snatched it up immediately, and untied the hankerchief, in which I found a knot containing ten zianiys, which are pieces of bad gold, current among the Moors, each of them valued at ten rials of our money. It would be superfluous to say that I rejoiced at this windfall: indeed my joy was equal to my surprize; for I could not conceive from whence that present could come, especially to me, the circumstance of the cane's being refused to every other person, plainly shewing that the favour was intended for me. I pocketed this lucky sum, broke the cane, returned to the terrafs, and looked at the window, thro' which appeared a very white hand, that opened the lattice, and hastily shut it again: from this circumstance we understood, or at least imagined, that we owed the present to some lady who lived in that house; and, in token of thanks, made our obeisance in the Moorish manner, by bowing the head, bending the body, and crossing the hands upon the breast. Soon after this ceremony, a small cross made of cane was held out at the window, and immediately withdrawn: a signal which confirmed us in the opinion, that we were befriended by some christian woman, who lived as a slave in that house; but this supposition was changed, when we reflected upon the whiteness of the hand, and the bracelets which we had perceived; and then we concluded that she must be one of those christian renegadoes whom their masters frequently take to wife; and even think themselves fortunate in having such an opportunity; for they esteem them much more than the women of their own nation: but all our conjectures were wide of the truth.

From this day forward, our whole entertainment was to gaze at the window, as the north in which the star of the cane had appeared: but, full fifteen days elapsed, before we had another glimpse either of that hand, or indeed of any other signal: and during

this interval, though we endeavoured, by all the means in our power, to learn who lived in that house, and whether or not there was a christian renegado in it, we never could get any other information, but that it belonged to a rich Moor of great note, called Agimorato, who had been alcaide of Pata, an office of great honour among that people : but, when we least expected another shower of zianiys, the cane reappeared all of a sudden, with another handkerchief, and a larger knot than before : and this occurrence happened as formerly, when none but ourselves were in the bath : we made the usual experiment ; each of my three companions going towards it, as at first, without success, until I approached, and then it was immediately dropped. I untied the knot, within which I found forty crowns in Spanish gold, and a paper written in Arabian characters, with a large cross at the head of the page : I kissed the sacred sign, put up the money, returned to the terrass, where we made our obeisance ; the hand appearing again, I made signs that I should read the letter, and then the window was shut. We were equally pleased and perplexed at this event ; for none of us understood Arabic ; and although our impatience to know the contents of the paper was very great, the difficulty of finding an interpreter was still greater : at length I determined to trust a renegado, a native of Murcia, who had professed himself my friend, and given me such pledges of his fidelity, as obliged him to keep any secret I should think proper to impart : for those renegadoes, who intend to return to Christendom, usually carry about with them certificates signed by the principal captives, attesting, in the most ample form they can devise, that such a renegado is an honest man, who hath always been obliging to the christians, and is desirous of making his escape with the first opportunity. Some there are who procure these testimonials with a good in-

intention; others use them occasionally, as the instruments of their craft; for going to rob and plunder on the christian coasts, if they should chance to be shipwrecked or taken, they produce their certificates, and observe, that these papers will shew the real design of their coming on a cruize with Turks, which was no other than to take the first occasion of returning to their native country: by these means, they escape the first fury of resentment, and are reconciled to the church, without suffering the least damage; but when they see their opportunity, they return to Barbary, and reassume their former way of life: whereas those who procure recommendations with a good design, make use of them accordingly, and remain in peace among the christians. Such a renegado was this friend, who had obtained certificates from all my companions, conceived in the strongest terms of confidence and applause; for which, had he been detected, the Moors would have burned him alive. I knew that he could both speak and write the Arabian tongue; but before I would disclose the whole affair, I desired him to read that paper, which I had found by chance in a corner of my cabin. He opened it accordingly, and having pored and perused it a good while, muttering between his teeth, I asked if he understood the contents? He answered in the affirmative, bidding me, if I chose to have the literal meaning, furnish him with pen and ink, that he might translate it the more exactly. I accordingly accommodated him with what he desired, and when he had made an end of the translation at his own leisure, he said, "This that I have written in Spanish, is the literal meaning of that Moorish paper; and you are to take notice, that wheresoever you meet with the words *Lela Marien*, they signify our lady the blessed virgin."

The paper contained these words, "When I was a child, my father had a woman slave, who in my

" own language, taught me the christian worship,
 " and told me divers things of Lela Marien. This
 " christian died, and I am sure her soul did not go to
 " the fire, but to Ala; for I saw her twice after her
 " death, and she advised me to go to the land of the
 " christians, where I should see Lela Marien, by
 " whom I was beloved. I know not which way to go:
 " many christians I have seen from this window, but
 " not one who seems so much a gentleman as your-
 " self. I am very beautiful and young, and have a
 " great deal of money in my possession: if thou canst
 " find out any method of carrying me to thy coun-
 " try, thou shalt there be my husband, if thou art so in-
 " clined; but if that be contrary to thy inclination, I
 " shall not be uneasy, for Lela Marien will provide me
 " with a spouse. I write this with my own hand;
 " let nobody read it, but such as you can trust. Be-
 " ware of the Moors: for they are altogether deceit-
 " ful: therefore, I am very much concerned, for I
 " would not have it disclosed to any person whatever;
 " because, if it should come to my father's ears, he
 " would instantly cause me to be sunk in a well, and
 " covered with stones. I will fasten a thread to the
 " cane, to which thou may'st tie thine answer; and
 " if thou hast not a proper person to write for thee
 " in Arabic, let me know by signs; for Lela Ma-
 " rien will help me to understand them. May she and
 " Ala preserve thee, by means of this cross, which I
 " often kiss, according to the direction of my decea-
 " sed slave."

You may easily conceive, gentlemen, whether or
 not we were surprised and rejoiced at the contents of
 this paper. Indeed, the symptoms of joy and admi-
 ration appeared so plain in our behaviour, that the re-
 negado suspected it was not found by accident, but
 actually written and addressed to one of our company.

He

He accordingly entreated us to tell him, if his conjecture was true ; protesting, that we might safely trust to his fidelity, and assuring us, if we would favour him with our confidence, he would venture his life in procuring our freedom. So saying, he pulled from his bosom a crucifix of metal, and with many tears, swore by the God represented under the form of that image, in whom he, though a wretched sinner, fully and faithfully believed, that he would be trusty and secret in every thing we should please to communicate ; for he firmly believed, and, as it were, prognosticated, that by means of her who had written the paper, we should all obtain liberty, and he accomplish that which he had so much at heart, namely, his readmission into the bosom of his holy mother church, from which he, thro' his ignorance and guilt, had been like a rotten member, divided and cut off. This declaration he made with so many tears and signs of repentance, that we unanimously agreed to entrust him with the affair, and accordingly gave him an account of every thing that had happened, without suppressing one circumstance ; and shewed him the window at which the cane had appeared ; so that from thence he took his mark of the house, resolving to inform himself, with great care and caution, of the name and quality of those who lived in it. Mean while, we were all of opinion, that there was a necessity for answering the billet : and there being a person present, who could perform that office, the renegado that instant wrote in Arabic what I dictated, which was literally as I shall now repeat ; for of all the material circumstances of that affair, not one hath escaped my memory, which will retain them all to my last breath. In short, this was the answer which I sent to the beautiful Moor.

“ My dear lady !

“ Mayest thou be protected by the true Ala, and
“ that

"that blessed Mary, the real mother of God, who, be-
 "cause she loves thee, hath put it into thy heart to
 "go to the land of christians: beseech her therefore,
 "that she will be pleased to teach thee how thou
 "mayest obey her commands; for she is so benevo-
 "lent, that she will grant thy request. For my own
 "part, and in behalf of those who are my fellow-pri-
 "soners, I promise to serve thee with our whole power,
 "even unto death. Fail not to write and give me
 "notice of what thou shalt resolve to do; and I
 "will always answer thy letters; for the great Ala-
 "hath favoured us with the friendship of a christia-
 "captive, who can speak and write thy language, as
 "thou wilt perceive by this paper; wherefore, thou
 "mayest communicate thy will and pleasure to us with-
 "out fear. As to thy offer of becoming my wife,
 "when thou shalt be safely settled in the land of the
 "christians, I pledge myself thine, on the faith of a
 "good christian; and know, that those of our religion
 "perform their promises more punctually than the
 "Moors. God, and his mother Mary, take my dear
 "lady into their holy protection."

This letter being written and sealed, I waited two
 days, until the bath was empty, and then went to the
 usual place on the terrass, to look for the cane, which
 in a little time appeared. I no sooner perceived the
 sign, though I could not see who made it, than I held
 up the letter, to make her understand that she should
 fasten a thread to the cane; but that was already done,
 and I tied the paper to it accordingly. In a little
 time our star appeared again, loaded with the white
 flag of peace; which being dropt, I took it up and
 found, in different coins of gold and silver, to the a-
 mount of fifty crowns, which increased our satisfaction
 fifty fold, and confirmed us in the hope of obtaining
 our freedom. That same night our renegado return-

ed,

ed, and told us, he was informed the house was inhabited by that same Moor I have mentioned under the name of Agimorato, who was excessively rich, and had only one daughter to inherit his whole fortune; that by the current report in the city, she was the most beautiful woman in Barbary; and that many of the viceroys, who went thither, had demanded her in marriage, but she would never yield her consent; he likewise understood that she had once a christian slave, who had died some time ago: so that all these circumstances agreed with the contents of her letter. We then consulted with the renegado about the means of transporting ourselves with the Moorish lady, into Christendom; and, at length, we came to the resolution of waiting for another intimation from Zorayda, which is the name of her who now desires to be called Maria: for we plainly perceived, that by means of her and no other, we should be enabled to surmount all the difficulties that occurred.

Having come to this determination, the renegado bid us give ourselves no uneasiness: for he would either procure our liberty, or forfeit his own life. The bath being full of people, during four days no case appeared all that time, at the end of which the usual solitude prevailing, we perceived it with a handkerchief so pregnant as to promise a most happy birth. I stood under it; the whole was dropped as usual, and I found in the handkerchief another paper, with one hundred crowns in gold, without any mixture of other coin. The renegado being then present, we carried him to our cabin, where we desired him to read the letter, which he interpreted in these words:

“ I know not, dear Sir, how to give directions about our passage into Spain; nor hath Lela Maria told me, though I have earnestly implored her assistance. But what may be easily effected is this: I will from this window furnish you with a great
“ quan-

"quantity of money; so that you may ransom your-
 "self and your companions, and going to the land of
 "the christians, purchase a bark, with which you
 "may return for the rest; and you will find me in
 "my father's garden, which is by the gate of
 "Barbazon, close to the sea-side. There I shall be
 "during the whole summer, with my father and
 "servants; and from thence you may, in the night
 "carry me to the bark without fear. But re-
 "member thou shalt be my husband; otherwise I will
 "pray to Marien to chastise thee. If thou canst de-
 "pend upon no other person for purchasing the bark,
 "ransom thyself for that purpose. I know thou wilt
 "be more apt than any other body to return, because
 "thou art a gentleman and a christian. Be sure to
 "inform thyself well about the garden. When I
 "see thee walking where thou art at present, I shall
 "know the bath is empty, and provide thee with more
 "money.

"Ala preserve thee, my dear gentleman."

These were the contents and purport of the second
 paper; which being read in presence of us all, each
 proposed himself as the person to be ransomed, pro-
 mising to go and return with the utmost punctuality:
 I likewise offered myself for that purpose. But the
 renegado opposed the proposal, saying, that he could
 by no means consent that one should be set free, before
 we had all obtained our liberty; because experience had
 taught him, how ill those who are free perform the
 promises they have made in their captivity: for pri-
 soners of note had often practised the expedient of
 ransoming one of their number, to go to Valencia or
 Majorca, with money to purchase an armed bark, and
 return for his companions; but they never saw his
 face again: for having once obtained his own liberty,
 the dread of losing it again, by returning, blots all
 manner

manner of obligations out of his remembrance. As a confirmation of the truth of what he alledged, he briefly recounted a case which had lately happened to some christian gentlemen, attended with the strangest circumstances ever known even in these parts, where the most uncommon and surprising events occur almost every day. In short, he told us, the most practicable and prudent scheme was, to give him the money we should receive for our ransom, with which he would purchase a bark at Algiers, under pretence of becoming merchant, and trading to Tetuan, and the other places on that coast; and that being master of the vessel, he would soon contrive the means of disengaging us from the bath, and getting us all on board: especially if the Moorish lady should perform her promise in supplying us with money sufficient to pay the ransom of our whole company; in which case, being no longer slaves, we might embark with the greatest ease and safety even at noon-day. The greatest difficulty that occurred was the backwardness of the Moors, to allow a renegado to purchase or command a vessel, unless it be a large cruizer for pirating; because they suspect, especially if he be a Spaniard, that his sole motive in buying a small bark, is to make his escape into Christendom; but he undertook to remedy that inconvenience, by giving a share of the bark and profits of the merchandise to a Tangarin Moor; by which means he should be master of the bark, and of consequence, have it in his power to accomplish the whole affair.

Although, in the opinion of me and my companions, there was no better plan than that of sending to Majorca for a bark, as the Moorish lady had proposed, we durst not contradict the sentiments of the renegado, lest he, being disobliged by our acting contrary to his intention, should make a discovery of our correspondence with the fair Moor, and endanger not only

only our own lives, but also that of Zorayda, for which we would have willingly sacrificed our own. We therefore determined to rely upon God and the renegado; and immediately wrote an answer to Zorayda, importing, that we would adhere in every thing to her advice, which was as prudent as if it had been dictated by Lela Marien; and that it depended solely upon her, either to hasten or retard the negotiation: pledging my faith anew, to become her spouse. In consequence of this intimation, the very next day, when the bath happened to be empty, she, at different times, by means of the cane and handkerchief, transmitted two thousand crowns in gold, with a paper signifying, that on the first Jama, which is Friday, she should set out for her father's garden, but, before her departure, would supply us with more money; and desired us to inform her, if we should find that insufficient, she would give us as much as we would desire, her father having such vast sums, that he would never be sensible of what she took, especially as all his keys were in her possession. We immediately accommodated the renegado with five hundred crowns, for the purchase of the bark: with eight hundred more I ransomed myself, depositing the money with a Valentian merchant then residing at Algiers, who bargained for my ransom with the king, and obtained my freedom, upon giving his word to pay the money, on the arrival of the first ship from Valencia; for if he had paid it immediately, the king would have suspected that the ransom had been some time at Algiers, and that the merchant had hitherto detained it for his own convenience. In short, my master was so contentious, that I durst, by no means, disburse the money at once. On the Thursday before the fair, Zorayda removed to her father's country-house, she gave us another thousand crowns, and apprized us of her departure: intreating me, as soon as I should be ransomed,

some
garden
to find
obey
recom
which
TH
for r
at lib
enoug
grine
the p
and in
appro
there
same
deposi
hands
fidenc
never
rayda.

DEF
had p
thirty
done v
a plac
giers,
trafic
of th
alread
Barba
by the
Vor

somed, to make myself acquainted with her father's garden, and find some opportunity of going thither to see her. I answered, in few words, that I would obey her in every thing, desiring she would fervently recommend us to Lela Marien in all those prayers which she had learned of the slave.

This affair being transacted, means were concerted for ransoming my three companions; lest, seeing me at liberty and themselves confined, since I had money enough to procure their freedom, they should be chagrined, and tempted by the devil to do something to the prejudice of Zorayda: for although their honour and integrity might have secured me against any such apprehension, I would not run the smallest risk, and therefore took care they should be ransomed by the same channel through which my liberty was obtained; depositing the whole sum required, in the merchant's hands, that he might, with more certainty and confidence, act the part of their bondsman; though we never disclosed to him our secret commerce with Zorayda, for fear of what might happen.

CHAP. XIV.

The continuation of the captive's adventures.

BEFORE fifteen days had elapsed, our renegade had purchased a stout vessel, capable of containing thirty persons at least; and to secure what he had done with a favourable pretext, he made a voyage to a place called Sargel, about thirty leagues from Algiers, towards the coast of Orán, where there is a great traffic of dried figs; and he made two or three trips of this kind, in company with the Tagarin Moor already mentioned. The Moors of Arragon are, in Barbary, called Tagarins, and those of Grenada go by the name of Mudajares; though these last are, in

the kingdom of Fez, called Elches, being the people whom the king chiefly uses in his wars. I say then, in every passage, the renegado brought his bark to an anchor in a small creek, within two bow-shots of Agimerato's garden; and there purposely employed himself and his Moorish rowers in practising the Zala*, or attempted that in jest which he intended to execute in earnest. He went frequently to Zorayda's garden, on pretence of asking fruit, which he always received from her father, though he did not know him: but although, as he afterwards owned, he wanted to speak with Zorayda, and tell her that he was the person appointed by me to carry her off to the land of the christians, that she might be satisfied and secure of his fidelity; he never had an opportunity of executing his design: for the Moorish women avoid the sight of their own countrymen and the Turks, unless when they are commanded to appear, by their parents and husbands; though they talk and converse with christian captives, even more freely than decency allows. I should have been very much concerned had he spoke with her, because it would, perhaps, have given her great uneasiness, to see renegadoes entrusted with the affair; but God, who ordained all for the best, gave him no opportunity of fulfilling his well-meaning intention.

Perceiving how securely he traded to and from Sargel, and anchored when, where, and how he pleased, his partner submitting to his direction in all things; and that I being ransomed, there was nothing wanted but some christians to row, he desired me to pick out those who should accompany me, exclusive of my friends who were ransomed, and bespeak them for the Friday following, which he had appointed for the day of our departure. Seeing him thus determined, I spoke to a dozen Spaniards, all of them able-bodied

* Zala, or Sala, is the Moorish salutation.

rowers, and people who could easily get out of the city: and indeed, it was no small difficulty to find so many at that conjuncture: for no fewer than twenty gallees being then out upon the cruize, almost all the rowers were employed, so that I should not have found those I have mentioned, had not their master staid at home that summer to finish a vessel which he had on the stocks. All I said to them was, that next Friday in the evening they should slyly slip out of the city, one by one, and betake themselves to Agimorato's garden, where they should wait my coming; and I directed every one by himself, if he should meet with other Christians at the rendezvous, to say nothing, but that I had ordered him to wait for me in that place.

This point being settled, another precaution, still more necessary, remained untaken; this was to advertise Zorayda of the situation of our affairs, that she might be prepared and guarded against surprize at our sudden assault, before she could think it possible that the christian bark was arrived. Resolved, therefore, to see and speak with her, if possible, one day before our departure, I went to the garden, on pretence of gathering some herbs; and the first person I met was her father, who spoke to me in a language used through all Barbary, and even at Constantinople, between the captives and the Moors; it is neither Arabic nor Castilian, nor indeed peculiar to any nation, but a mixture of different tongues, by which we make shift to understand each other. I say, he asked in this sort of jargon, who I was, and what I wanted in his garden? I answered, that I was a slave belonging to Amante Mami, who I knew to be an intimate friend of his; and that I wanted a few herbs for a salad. In consequence of this answer, he enquired whether or not I was to be ransomed, and what my master demanded for my freedom? and while we were thus conversing together, the fair Zorayda came out into the garden.

She had already perceived me from a window of the house; and, as the Moorish women make no scruple of shewing themselves to Christians, with whom, as I have already observed, they are not at all shy, she, without any hesitation, walked towards the place where I was standing with her father, who no sooner saw her, than he called at a distance, desiring her to come up. It would be a difficult task for me, at present, to describe the exceeding beauty, the genteel mein, the gay and rich ornaments with which my beloved Zorayda then presented herself before mine eyes: I shall only observe, that the pearls about her beauteous neck and ears, outnumbered the hairs of her head. On her ankles, which were bare, according to the custom of the country, she wore carcaxes (by which name the bracelets for the feet are called in the Morisco language), of the purest gold, set with such a quantity of diamonds, that she afterwards told me, that her father valued them at twenty thousand ducats; and those she wore upon her wrists were of equal richness. The pearls, though in such a vast number, were extremely fine: for the greatest pride and magnificence of the Moorish women lie in pearls and embroidery; consequently, there is a great quantity of pearls and seed-pearl in Barbary, than in all the other nations of the world, and Zorayda's father had the reputation of possessing the greatest number and the best in Algiers, together with a fortune of two hundred thousand Spanish crowns, of all which she, who is now mine, was once mistress. Whether, with the assistance of all these ornaments, she appeared beautiful or not, and what she must have been in her prosperity, may be conjectured by what remains after the great fatigues she hath undergone; for it is well known, that the beauty of some women hath its days and seasons, and is diminished or increased, according to the circumstances that happen; being improved or im-

paired,

paired, nay, often totally destroyed, by the passions of the mind. In short, she approached in all the pomp of dress, and all the excess of beauty; at least to me, she seemed the most beautiful creature I had ever seen; which circumstance, joined to the obligation I lay under, made me look upon her as an angel sent from heaven for my delight and deliverance. When she came up, her father told her, in their own language, that I was a captive belonging to his friend Arnauti Mami, and had come for a sallad; upon which she took up the discourse, and in that jumble of languages before mentioned, asked if I was a gentleman; and why I did not ransom myself? I answered, that I was already ransomed, and that she might see in what esteem I was with my master, by the sum he received for my freedom, which was no less than fifteen hundred sultanins. To this observation she replied, "Truly, if thou hadst belonged to my father, he should not have parted with thee for twice the sum; for you Christians always dissemble, and call yourselves poorer than you really are, with a view of imposing upon the Moors." "That may be sometimes the case, madam, said I; but I adhered to the truth, in bargaining with my master, and will deal honestly with all mankind." She then asked how soon I intended to depart; and I answered, "To-morrow, I believe: there is a French ship in the harbour to-sail in the morning, and I have some thoughts of taking my passage on board of her." "Had not you better stay till the arrival of a vessel from Spain, said Zorayda, than trust yourself with the French, who are no good friends of yours?" No, madam, answered I; though, as there is a Spanish ship expected, if she arrives immediately, I believe I shall wait for her: but it is more likely that I shall sail to-morrow; for the desire I have to see myself in my native country, with those I love, is too strong to let me wait for any other convenience,

nience, let it be ever so good." "Without doubt, said Zorayda, thou art married in thy own country, and therefore desirous of being with thy wife." "I am not yet wedded, I replied; but under promise of being married at my return." "And is the woman beautiful to whom thou hast pledged thy faith?" said she. "So beautiful, answered I, that to compliment her, and tell thee the truth, she is the exact resemblance of thyself."

Her father laughed heartily at this declaration, saying, "Truly, Christian, she must be very handsome indeed, if she resembles my daughter, who is the most beautiful woman in this kingdom: look at her, and thou wilt see whether or not I speak truth."

In the greatest part of this conversation, Agimorato served as interpreter for his daughter, he being better acquainted with this spurious language, which, though she understood a little, in consequence of its being much spoke among the Moors, she explained her meaning by signs, oftener than by words.

While we were engaged in this and other such conversation, a Moor ran towards us, crying aloud, that four Turks having got through the pales, or leaped over the garden-wall, were gathering the fruit, though it was not yet ripe. At this information the old man and Zorayda, started; for the Moors are commonly, and as it were naturally, afraid of the Turks, especially the soldiers, who are so insolent and imperious to their Moorish subjects, that they treat them worse than if they were slaves. Accordingly, the father said to Zorayda, "Daughter, retire to the house, and lock thyself up, while I go and talk to those dogs; and thou, Christian (turning to me), gather thy herbs, and depart in peace; and Ala send thee safe into thy own country." I made my obeisance, and he went in search of the Turks, leaving me alone with Zorayda, who pretended to go homeward, according to
her

her father's desire ; but no sooner was he out of sight, among the trees of the garden, than she came back, with her eyes drowned in tears, saying, " Amexi, Christiano, amexi !" the signification of which address is, " Thou art going away Christian, thou art going away !" " Yes, madam, answered I, but by no means without you : on the next Jama expect me, and be not afraid when you see us ; for we shall certainly go to the land of the Christians." I made shift to express myself in such a manner that she understood this, and every thing else that I said ; and throwing her arm about my neck, began to walk towards the house, with a slow and faltering pace : but it pleased fortune, which might have proved very unlucky, had not heaven otherwise ordained, that while we walked in this attitude, with her arm about my neck, we were observed by her father, on his return from having sent away the Turks ; and we immediately perceived ourselves discovered. Nevertheless Zorayda, prompted by her discretion and presence of mind, would not take her arm from my neck ; but on the contrary, coming closer to me, let her head drop upon my bosom, and her knees sink under her, as if she was fainting ; while I seemed to support her with a sort of strained civility.

The father seeing his daughter in this situation, ran towards us with great concern, and asked what was the matter ? but she making no reply, " Doubtless, said he, she hath fainted with the fright occasioned by the insolence of those dogs." Then, taking her out of my arms, he supported her in his own ; while she, fetching a deep sigh, the tears still continuing in her eyes, repeated, " Amexi, Christiano, amexi : " " Begone Christian, begone." " There is no necessity for the Christian's departure, said the father, he hath done thee no harm ; and as the Turks are gone already, be not disturbed : thou hast no cause to be uneasy : for as I have already said, the Turks, at my entreaty, went out

out as they had come in." "Indeed, sir, said I, they have discomposed her very much, as you observe; but since she desires me to go, I will not stay to give offence. Peace be with you. I will, with your permission, return to this garden for herbs, if they should be wanted; for my master says there are none better to be found in any other place." "Thou mayest come as often as thou wilt, answered Agimorato: what my daughter says is not out of resentment against thee, or any other Christian; but instead of bidding the Turks begone, she applied the words to thee, or else thought it was time for thee to go and gather thy herbs." I then took leave of them both; and she, as if her soul had been rent from her body, went away with her father, while I, on pretence of culling my sallad, went round the whole garden, at my pleasure, observing all the entries and outlets, together with the strength of the house, and every convenience that might tend to facilitate our purpose.

Having thus reconnoitred, I went and communicated my observations to the renegado, and the rest of my companions, longing eagerly for the hour of seeing myself in peaceable possession of the blessing which fortune presented in the beauteous and charming Zorayda. At length, the intervening time elapsed, and the long wished-for day and period arrived, when all of us following the order and plan which had been often canvassed, and at last settled, after the most mature deliberation; our desires were happily accomplished. On the Friday after I had spoke with Zorayda, Morrenago, which was the renegado's name, anchored his bark, at night-fall, opposite to the place where my charming mistress resided; and the Christians who were to row, in consequence of my directions, lay already concealed in different corners, all around the place, waiting for me with impatience, joy, and desire of attacking the vessel which was in view: for
they

they were ignorant of our confederacy with the renegado, and believed that they must win and maintain their liberty by force of arms, in killing all the Moors who belonged to the bark: wherefore, as soon as I and my companions appeared, those who were hid came and joined us immediately, about the time when the city gates were shut; so that not a soul was to be seen in the fields. Being all met together, we were in some doubt whether we should go immediately for Zorayda, or first of all secure the Moorish rowers belonging to the bark. While we hesitated on this point, the renegado arriving, asked what we waited for? observing, that now was the time, the Moors being altogether unguarded, and the greatest part of them actually asleep: we told him the subject of our doubt; upon which he assured us, that it was of the greatest consequence to make ourselves first masters of the bark, a precaution which might be easily taken, without running the least hazard; and then we could go in quest of Zorayda, with greater security. His advice was unanimously approved; and therefore, without farther delay, we follow him as guide to the vessel, into which he leaped, and drawing a scymitar, called in the Moorish language, "Let none of you stir on pain of death." The Christians were at his back in an instant; while the Moors, being naturally pusillanimous, hearing their master talk in this manner, were seized with consternation; and as there were few or no arms on board, suffered themselves, without the least resistance, to be fettered by the Christians, who performed this office with infinite dexterity and dispatch, threatening to put them all to the sword, if any one of them should raise his voice, or attempt to make the least noise.

This scheme being executed, we left one half of our number to guard them, and with the rest, using the renegado still as our guide, went to Agimorato's garden.

garden-door, which fortunately opened with as much ease as if it had not been locked; so that, without being perceived, we proceeded to the house with great silence and composure. The adorable Zorayda, who stood waiting for us at a window, no sooner perceived people at the door, than she asked, with a low voice, if we were Nazarini, which in their language signifies Christians? I replied in the affirmative, desiring her to come down: when she knew my voice, she made no delay, but without answering one syllable, came down in a moment, opened the door, and appeared so beautiful and richly dressed, as to surpass all description. Transported at the sight, I took her hand and kissed it most devoutly: the renegado, and my two companions, did the same, and the rest, though ignorant of the occasion, followed our example, thinking we expressed our thanks and acknowledgments to her as the instrument of our deliverance. The renegado asked, in the Moreisco tongue, if her father was in the house? and she assuring him, that he was asleep in his own apartment: "Then it will be necessary, said Morrenago, we take and carry him off, together with every thing of value, in this agreeable habitation." "Touch not my father, said she, and take my word for it, there is nothing valuable in this house but what I have secured, which is enough to make you all rich and happy: stay a little, and thou shalt see."

So saying, she went back into the house, protesting she would immediately return, and desiring us to make no noise. I then asked the renegado what had passed between them, and when he told me, charged him to do nothing that should be disagreeable to Zorayda, who soon returned with a coffer so full of golden crowns, that she could scarce support the weight: but our evil fortune ordained that her father should wake in the interim, and hear a noise in the garden; upon which he started up, and running to the window,

no sooner perceived that we were all Christians, than he began to bawl, in Arabic, with vast vociferation, "Christians! Christians! thieves! thieves!" and his cries threw us all into the utmost terror and confusion: however, the renegado seeing the danger we were in, and how much it imported him to atchieve the enterprise, without being detected, ran up to Agimorate, with infinite agility, being accompanied with some others of our company, as I could not leave Zorayda, who by this time had fainted in my arms: in short, those who entered the house managed him so well, that in a moment they brought him down, with his hands tied, and an handkerchief in his mouth, to hinder him from crying, threatening all the while, that if he presumed to speak, it would cost him his life. His daughter covered her eyes, that she might not see her father in that condition; while he was astonished at sight of her, little thinking how willingly she had put herself in our power; and our feet being then more necessary than our hands, we, with great industry and dispatch, returned to the vessel, where we were expected with impatience by those we had left, who had begun to fear we had met with some mischance.

Before two hours of the night had elapsed, we were all safe on board, where we untied the hands of Zorayda's father, and took the handkerchief out of his mouth: though the renegado commanded him again to be silent, on pain of death. Seeing his daughter also in our power, he began to sigh most bitterly, more especially as he perceived her lie quietly in my arms, without resisting, complaining, or the least appearance of constraint: but he was fain to hold his tongue, lest the renegado should put his repeated threats in execution. Zorayda now seeing us embarked, and on the point of manning the oars, while her father and the other Moors remained fettered, as prisoners among us, made the renegado desire, in her name, that I would

be

be so good as to dismiss the Moors, and set her father at liberty ; for she would rather throw herself into the sea, than behold a parent, who loved her so much, dragged into captivity on her account. Morrenago having made me acquainted with her request, I consented to the proposal ; but he said it was by no means expedient, because, should we leave them there, they would instantly alarm both town and country ; so that some light frigates would be sent out in pursuit of us, and then we should be so beset, both by sea and land, that it would be impossible for us to escape : he proposed, therefore, to set them at liberty on the first Christian land he should make. We were all of the same opinion, which was also embraced by Zorayda, to whom he imparted the reasons which hindered us from complying immediately with her desire ; then each of our valiant rowers laid hold of his oar with joy, silence, and alacrity, and recommending ourselves to the protection of God, we took our departure, directing our course towards the island of Majorca, which was the nearest Christian land ! but the north wind beginning to blow, and the sea becoming rough, it was impossible to steer our course, and we were obliged to row along shore towards Oran, not without great apprehension of being discovered from the town of Sargel, which lies upon that coast, about sixty miles from Algiers ; we were also afraid of meeting in those parts with some of the galleys which frequently come thither from Tetuan to trade ; though each of us singly, and all of us together, presumed, that if we could fall in with a merchant vessel not fitted out, or manned for a corsair, far from losing our liberty again, we should make ourselves masters of a ship in which we might perform our voyage with more security. While we thus coasted along, Zorayda lay with her head in my bosom, that she might not see her father

in

in distr
rien to

Wh
ing dis
stant fr
soul ap
hard to
somew
directe
fresh c
plenty
no tim
victual
ing tha
hint w
up, we
fail dir
any oth
positio
hour, v
with se
given t
do's te
have th
same d
answere
your ge
but ye
will giv
run sue
restorin
who I a
ransom,
mise to
unhapp
part of

So fa
Vol.

in distress ; and I could hear her imploring Lela Marien to assist us in our design.

When we had rowed about thirty miles, day breaking discovered that we were about three gun shots distant from the shore of a desert country, where not a soul appeared to detect us : but for all that, we plied hard to get a little farther off to sea, which was now somewhat calmer ; and having made about two leagues, directed the men to row by turns, that we might refresh ourselves with the provisions, of which we had plenty in the bark ; but the rowers said, it was then no time to be idle, and desired the rest to bring them victuals, which they would eat while at work, protesting that they would by no means quit their oars : this hint was accordingly taken, and a fresh gale springing up, we were obliged to lay aside our oars, and make sail directly for Oran : for it was impossible to follow any other course. All this was done with great expedition ; we sailed at the rate of eight miles in an hour, without any other dread than that of falling in with some corsair. We ordered some victuals to be given to the Moors, who were consoled by the renegado's telling them that they were not slaves, and should have their freedom with the first opportunity : the same declaration he made to Zorayda's father, who answered, " I might expect any other favour from your generosity and courteous behaviour, O Christians ! but you must not think me so simple as to believe you will give me my freedom ; for you would never have run such risk in depriving me of it, with a view of restoring it so liberally ; especially, when you know who I am, and the advantage you may reap from my ransom, which, if you will now propose, I here promise to pay your utmost demand, for myself and this unhappy daughter, or for her alone, who is the better part of my soul."

So saying, he wept with such bitterness as moved

us all to compassion, and obliged Zorayda to lift up her eyes; when seeing the tears trickle down from his aged cheeks, she was melted, and rising from the place where I supported her, went to embrace her father; then joining her face to his, the two uttered such a tender lamentation, as drew tears of sympathy from the eyes of almost all those who heard it; but when Agimorato perceived her so gaily dressed, with all her jewels about her, he said with some surprise, in their language, "What is the meaning of this finery, my child? Last night, before this terrible misfortune happened, I saw thee in thy ordinary and common dress; but now, though thou hadst neither time, nor any happy tidings to solemnize with such ornaments and finery, I see thee decked in all the richest apparel I could contrive or bestow upon thee, while fortune was much more favourable than at present! Answer me in this particular, at which I am more concerned and surprized, than at the mishap which hath befallen us?" The renegado interpreted to us all what the Moor said to his daughter, who made no answer to his question: but when he saw on one side of the bark, the coffer in which she used to keep her jewels, which he knew he had left at Algiers, when he moved to his country house, he was still more confounded, and asked how that casket had fallen into our hands, and what it contained? To this question the renegado replied without waiting for Zorayda's answer; "You need not weary yourself, signor, in putting so many questions to your daughter; for I can satisfy you in one word: know then, that Zorayda is a christian; that she hath filed off our chains, and converted our captivity into freedom; that she came hither of her own accord, and is now, I believe, as well satisfied with her present condition as one delivered from darkness to light, from death to life, and from affliction to triumph." "Daughter," cried the Moor,

Moor,
plied Z
and th
hands
am a
the pe
desire
you un
my ow
it, my
to Lel
ter tha
Scar
rato, t
headlo
most h
helped
ged we
erted
pulled
prived
ed with
and do
actually
great
recover
hours,
ven to
kept fr
we arri
monitor
Cava F
woman

* Cav
was vio
venge t
kingdon

Moor, "is that which he affirms, true?" "Yes," replied Zorayda. "That thou art actually a Christian, and the very person who hath put thy father into the hands of his enemies?" resumed the old man. "I am a Christian, 'tis true," said Zorayda, "but not the person who reduced you to this situation; for my desire never extended so far as either to leave or render you unhappy, my sole intention being to provide for my own welfare." "And how hast thou provided for it, my child?" replied the father. "Put that question to Lela Marien," said she, "who will inform you better than I can."

Scarcely had these words reached the ears of Agimorato, than, with incredible agility, he darted himself headlong into the sea, where, without all doubt, he must have perished, had not his large entangling robes helped to keep him afloat. Zorayda shrieking, begged we would save her father; upon which we all exerted ourselves, and laying hold of his upper garment, pulled him on board, already half-drowned, and deprived of all sensation; when she was so much affected with his condition, that she uttered a most tender and doleful lamentation over him, as if he had been actually dead. Having turned him upon his face, a great quantity of water run out of his mouth, and he recovered the use of his senses, in the space of two hours, during which, the wind shifting, we were driven towards the shore, and by main dint of rowing, kept from running aground; but, by good fortune, we arrived in a creek formed by a small creek or promontory, known among the Moors by the name of Cava Rumia, which signifies The wicked Christian woman; there being a tradition among them, that *

* Cava or Caba, daughter of count Julian, count of Ceura, was violated by Roderick king of Spain, and, in order to revenge this injury, the father called the Saracens into that kingdom, in the year 712.

Cava, on whose account they lost their possessions in Spain, is interred in that place; for Cava in their language, implies a Wicked Woman, and Rumia signifies Christian: so that they look upon it as a bad omen when they are obliged, by necessity, to drop anchor here, and, except in cases of emergency, they never attempt it: though to us it was by no means the shelter of a wicked woman, but a secure harbour in stormy weather. Having placed centinels on shore, without quitting our oars, we made another meal of what the renegado had provided; and prayed heartily to God and the Blessed Virgin, to favour and assist us in bringing such a fortunate beginning to a happy conclusion. We then determined, at the intreaty of Zorayda, to set her father and the Moors, whom we had fettered, on shore, because she had not resolution enough, nor could her tender disposition endure to see her parent and countrymen in the condition of captives: we accordingly promised to gratify her desire at our departure, since we ran no risk in setting them at liberty in that uninhabited place.

Our prayers were not so vain as to be rejected by Heaven, that sent a favourable wind and a smooth sea, inviting us to proceed with alacrity in the voyage we had undertaken. This we no sooner perceived, than, unbinding the Moors, we put them all on shore, one by one, to their no small astonishment; but when we came to dismiss Zorayda's father, who by this time had recovered the entire use of his senses, "Christians," said he, "do you think that bad woman rejoices at my freedom through sly piety? No, surely, but merely to be rid of the check which she would receive from my presence, in seeking to gratify her vicious desires. Do not imagine that she hath been induced to change her religion, because she believes that the Christian faith is preferable to ours! No; she hath
apostatized,

apostat
try, sh
ly tha
while
might
infamo
riels an
self in
ral foe
gender
which

Pero
ing his
on shor
precati
of Mah
destroy
we co
beard,
once h
could c
loved
that is
they a
comfor
fakest
barren
Zoray
sensibil
than t
Marien
console
do oth
sians o
them;
in thei
would

apostatized, because she understood that, in your country, she might indulge her loose inclinations more freely than in her own." Then turning to Zorayda, while I and another Christian held him fast, that he might not commit some desperate action, he said, "O infamous wretch, and ill advised maiden! what blindness and distraction hath prompted thee to put thyself in the power of these dogs, who are all our natural foes? Cursed be the hour in which thou wast engendered! and cursed be the gait and indulgence in which I brought thee up!"

Perceiving that there was no likelihood of his ending his exclamations for some time I presently set him on shore, where he proceeded with his reproaches, imprecations, and complaints, imploring the mediation of Mahomet with Ala, to confound, overwhelm, and destroy us; and when we had failed out of hearing, we could perceive him act his despair, pulling his beard, and rolling himself upon the ground; nay, once he raised his voice in such a manner, that we could distinctly hear him pronounce, "Return, my beloved daughter! return to the shore; I forgive all that is past: leave with these men the money which they already have in their possession, and return to comfort thy disconsolate father, who, if thou forsakest him, will lie down and breathe his last upon this barren sand!" This pathetic address was heard by Zorayda, who lamented his affliction with the utmost sensibility, though she could make no better reply than this, "Ala grant, my dear father, that Lela Marien, who was the cause of my conversion, may console you in your distress! Ala knows I could not do otherwise than I have acted, and that these Christians owe nothing to any particular good will I bore them; for if I had not assisted and accompanied them in their escape, but remained at home with you, it would have been impossible for me, in consequence of

the earnest solicitations of my own soul, to execute that which, in my opinion, is as righteous as it is infamous and wicked in yours." But these words never reached the ears of her father, whom by this time we could not perceive: I therefore endeavoured to console my amiable mistress, while the rest were intent upon our voyage, which was so much favoured by a fair wind, that we laid our accounts with being next day on the coast of Spain.

But as good fortune seldom comes pure and single, unattended or unpursued by some troublesome and unexpected circumstance, it was ordained by Heaven, perhaps in consequence of the curses imprecated by the Moor upon his daughter; for such curses are to be dreaded, let the parent be what he will: I say, Heaven ordained, that when we were a good way off at sea, with a flowing sheet, three hours of the night being already spent, the oars lashed up, because the fair wind made it unnecessary to use them, and the moon shining with remarkable brightness; we perceived a large round vessel with all her sails out, steering a little upon the wind, right athwart our hause, and so near, that we were obliged to shorten sail that she might not run foul of us, while she clapped her helm aweather that we might have time to pass: those upon deck hailed us, asking who we were, whence we came, and whether bound? but as they spoke in French, the renegado said, "Let no man answer; these are French privateers, who make prize of every thing that falls in their way."

Thus cautioned, we made no reply, but sailed on, leaving the ship a little to windward, when all of a sudden, they discharged two pieces of cannon loaded, in all appearance with chain-shot; for one of them cut away our mast in the middle, which with the sail, fell overboard into the sea; and the other, coming a moment after, took us amidships, and laid the side of the

bark

bark
Seeing
aloud
to sail
hoisting
manner
their
us, and
was o
that t
been
while
the co
and t
board
ed th
their
dered
very b
haviour
afraid
cious
which
esteem
fires o
and w
which
even
wore
to any
to wr
sea; I
Spain
carrie
discov
the ca
loved

bark entirely open, without doing any other mischief. Seeing ourselves going to the bottom, we began to cry aloud for assistance, beseeching the people in the ship to save us from perishing : then they brought to, and hoisting out their boat or pinnace, it was instantly manned by a dozen of Frenchmen, well armed with their muskets and lighted match, who rowing up to us, and seeing how few we were, as also that our bark was on the point of foundering, took us in, observing that this misfortune had nappened, because we had been so uncivil as to refuse an answer to their hail : while the renegado, without being perceived, took up the coffer in which Zorayda's treasure was contained, and threw it into the sea. In short, we went on board with the French, who, when they had informed themselves of every thing we could impart for their purpose ; as if they had been our enemies, plundered us of all that we had, taking from Zorayda the very bracelets she wore upon her ancles : but their behaviour to her gave me the more anxiety, as I was afraid that, after having pilfered all her rich and precious jewels, they would proceed to rob her of that which was of greater value, and which she herself esteemed infinitely more than all the rest : but the desires of those people extend no farther than to money, and with that they can never satiate their avarice, which then engrossed them so much, that they would even have robbed us of the wretched garments we wore in our captivity, if they could have applied them to any sort of use : nay, some among them proposed to wrap us altogether in a sail, and throw us into the sea ; because they intended to trade in the ports of Spain, under pretence of being Britons, and if they carried us thither alive, their depredation would be discovered, and themselves chastised accordingly. But the captain, who had with his own hands rifled my beloved Zorayda, said he was satisfied with the prize he had

had got, and resolved to touch at no port in Spain, but pass the streights of Gibraltar in the night, or take the best opportunity of so doing that should occur, and return to Rochelle, from whence he had failed on the cruize: they therefore agreed to give us their boat with what necessaries we should want, to finish the little that remained of our voyage: this promise they actually performed next day, at a small distance from the Spanish coast, at sight of which all our poverty and vexation vanished from our remembrance, as if we had never endured them; such is the transport occasioned by liberty regained! It might be about noon when we were put into the boat, with two casks of water and some biscuit; and the captain, moved to compassion at the distress of the lovely Zorayda, gave her to the amount of forty crowns in gold, and would not suffer his soldiers to strip her of the cloaths which she now wears: so that at parting, instead of complaining of the hard usage we met with, we thanked them kindly for the benefit we had received at their hands. They steered right before the wind for the streights, while we, without minding any other compass than that of the land that appeared ahead, plied our oars so vigorously, that, at sunset, we were near enough to conclude, that we could easily reach the shore before the night should be far advanced; but that night being dark, without any moonshine, and every body on board ignorant of the coast, some of our company judged it unsafe to row ashore, while others insisted upon our running that hazard, even if we should land among rocks, or in some uninhabited part of the country, that we might be secured from the just apprehension of meeting with some rowers from Tetuan, who are frequently, in the beginning of the night, in Barbary, and in the morning, on the Spanish coast, where having taken a prize, they return the same day, and sleep at home in their

own

own
that o
if the
the fi
solutio
foot o
toward
for cor
and all
with t
to our
vouchf
the pro
vast wa
quiet o
it actu
ground
have v
mit of
for som
viewed
discern
trace o
ed to p
not be
who w
the gre
foot, a
times t
fatigue
ing he
would
kind, b
tience,
In t
league,
small st

own houses. Of these contrary opinions we chose that of rowing gently towards the shore, with intent, if the smoothness of the sea would permit, to land at the first convenient place; in consequence of this resolution, a little before midnight, we arrived at the foot of a huge and lofty mountain, tho' not so rocky towards the sea but that there was a little space left, for commodious landing: the boat being run ashore, and all of us disembarked, we kissed the ground, and with tears of unutterable joy, returned sincere thanks to our gracious Lord, for his unparalleled protection vouchsafed to us in the voyage: then we took out the provision, and dragging her on shore, ascended a vast way up the mountain; not being as yet able to quiet our apprehensions, or persuade ourselves, though it actually was so, that the soil we trod was Christian ground. The day broke much later than we could have wished, and about this time we gained the summit of the mountain, purposing to look from thence for some village or shepherd huts; but although we viewed the whole country around, we could neither discern village, house, highway, path, nor the least trace of human footsteps. Nevertheless we determined to penetrate farther into the country, since it could not be long before we should discover some person who would give us information: but what gave me the greatest concern, was to see Zorayda travelling on foot, among the flinty rocks; for though I sometimes took her on my shoulders, she was much more fatigued with seeing me weary, than refreshed by finding herself exempted from walking; and therefore would not allow me to take any more trouble of that kind, but proceeded with infinite cheerfulness and patience, while I led her by the hand all the way.

In this manner we had gone about a quarter of a league, when our ears were saluted by the sound of a small sheep-bell, which was a sure sign of a flock's being

ing somewhere not far off; looking therefore attentively, to discover it, we perceived a young shepherd, sitting with great composure at the root of a cork-tree, smoothing a stick with his knife: when we called to him, he raised his head, and started nimbly up, and as we afterwards understood, the renegado, and Zorayda, who were in Moorish dress, being the first objects that presented themselves to his eyes, he thought all the corsairs of Barbary were upon him, and running with incredible swiftness into a wood that grew near the place where he was, he began to cry as loud as he could bawl, "The Moors! the Moors are landed! the Moors, the Moors! to arms, to arms!" This exclamation threw us all into perplexity, but reflecting that his cries would alarm the country, and that the cavalry of the coast would immediately come and see what was the matter; it was agreed, that the renegado should pull off his Turkish robes, and put on a slave's jacket, with which one of our company accommodated him, tho' he himself remained in his shirt. This being done, we recommended ourselves to God, and followed the same road which we saw the shepherd take, expecting every moment to see ourselves surrounded by the cavalry of the coast. Neither were we deceived in our expectation; for in less than two hours, having crossed those thickets, and entered a plain on the other side, we descried about fifty horsemen riding briskly towards us, at a hand gallop; upon which we halted until they should come up: but when they arrived, and, instead of the Moors they came in quest of, beheld so many poor Christian captives, they were utterly confounded, and one of them asked if we were the people who had been the occasion of a shepherd's calling to arms? I answered in the affirmative; and being desirous of telling him who we were, whence we came, and what had happened to us, one of our company knew the
horseman

horseman
time t
God,
agreea
taken,
Malaga
impaired
question
Scar
when t
ran to
phew o
suppos
thy mo
for He
they m
knew t
of thy
you ha
jecture
shall ha
as the
tives, t
of his
which
where t
boat ro
the lay
da rod
came o
by one
not tha
freed,
that co
both;
da, wh
fatigue

horseman who accosted us, and without giving me time to speak another word, said, "Thanks be to God, gentlemen, for having conducted us to such an agreeable part of the country, for, if I am not mistaken, the ground we now tread belongs to Velez Malaga; and, if the years of my captivity have not impaired my remembrance, you, signor, who asks that question, are Pedro Bustamante, my uncle."

Scarce had the captive pronounced these words, when the cavalier threw himself from his horse, and ran to embrace the young man, saying, "Dear nephew of my life and soul! I now recollect thee: thy supposed death has been mourned by myself, my sister, thy mother, and all thy relations, who are still alive; for Heaven hath been pleased to spare their lives, that they might enjoy the pleasure of seeing thee again: I knew thou wast at Algiers, and from the information of thy habit, and that of all your company, I guess you have made a miraculous escape." "Your conjecture is true," replied the young man, "and we shall have time to recount the particulars." As soon as the horsemen understood we were Christian captives, they alighted, and each of them made a tender of his horse to carry us to the city of Velez Malaga, which was about a league and a half from the place where they found us. Some of them went to bring the boat round to the city, after we had told them where she lay; others took us up behind them; and Zorayda rode with the christian's uncle. All the people came out to receive us, being apprized of our arrival by one of the troopers who had pushed on before; not that they were surprized at the sight of captives freed, or Moors in captivity; for the inhabitants on that coast are accustomed to see great numbers of both; but they were amazed at the beauty of Zorayda, which was at this instant in full perfection; the fatigue of her journey co-operating with the joy she felt

felt in seeing herself in a Christian country, without the fear of being lost, having produced such a bloom upon her countenance, that, unless I was then prejudiced by my affection, I will venture to say, the world never produced, at least, I had never seen, a more beautiful creature.

We went directly to church, to make our acknowledgments to God for his mercies; and as soon as Zorayda entered, she said she perceived some faces that resembled Lela Marien: we told her these were the images of the Blessed Virgin; and the renegado, as well as he could, informed her of their signification, that she might adore them, as if each was actually the person of Lela Marien, who had spoke to her; so that, having naturally a good understanding, with a docile and discerning disposition, she easily comprehended what he said upon the subject. From thence they conducted us to our lodgings in different families of the town; the renegado, Zorayda, and I, being invited by the Christian who escaped with us, to the house of his father, who was moderately provided with the good things of this life, and treated us with the same affection he expressed for his own son. Six days we tarried at Velez, during which the renegado, having informed himself of what was necessary for him to do, went to the city of Grenada, there, by means of the holy inquisition, to be readmitted into the bosom of our most sacred church: the rest of our company departed, each for his own home: leaving Zorayda and me by ourselves, destitute of every thing but the few crowns which she received from the courtesy of the French corsair. With part of these I bought the animal on which she arrived at this inn, and hitherto have cherished her with the affection of a parent, and the service of a squire, without using the prerogative of a husband: we are now upon the road to the place of my nativity, to see if my father

be

be still
more
made
not h
which
tience
ing po
Christi
admira
of my
in the
pervert
country
ter the
may h
lives of
learce

This
whethe
lave to
ing you
ciely,
suppres

Of wha

HER

Fernan
nov-ly
agreeab
is uncor
keep th
is the p
the nar

VOL.

be still alive, and if either of my brothers has been more fortunate than myself; tho', as Heaven hath made Zorayda my companion for life, fortune could not have possibly bestowed upon me any other favour which I should have valued at so high a rate. The patience with which she bears the inconveniences attending poverty, and the zeal she manifests to become a Christian, is so great and extraordinary, as to raise my admiration, and engage me to serve her all the days of my life: but the pleasure I take in this office, and in the prospect of seeing her mine, is disturbed and perverted, by reflecting, that possibly, in my own country, I shall not find a corner in which I can shelter the dear object of my love; and that time or death may have made such alterations in the fortune and lives of my father and his other children, that I shall scarce meet with a soul that knows me.

This, gentlemen, is the substance of my story: whether or not it be agreeable and uncommon, I leave to the decision of your better judgment; assuring you that I wish I could have related it more succinctly, though the fear of tiring you hath made me suppress a good number of circumstances.

CHAP. XV.

Of what further happened at the inn, with many other particulars worthy to be known.

HERE the captive left off speaking; and Don Fernando said to him, " Really, Signor captain, the novelty of your strange adventures is equalled by your agreeable manner of relating them. Your whole story is uncommon, surprising, and full of incidents that keep the hearers in admiration and suspense: and such is the pleasure we have received from it, that though the narration should have continued till to-morrow morning

morning, we should rejoice at your beginning it anew."

When this compliment was passed, Cardenio, and all the rest of the company, offered to serve him to the utmost of their power, with such affectionate and sincere expressions of friendship, that the captain was extremely well satisfied of their good-will. Don Fernando, in particular, promised, that if he would go home with him, his brother the marquis should stand godfather to Zorayda; and that he, for his part, would accommodate him in such a manner, that he should return to the place of his nativity with that authority and ease to which he was entitled by his birth and merit. The captive thanked him in the most courteous manner, but declined accepting any of his generous offers.

It was now night, when a coach arrived at the inn, attended by some men on horseback, who demanded lodging: and the landlady made answer, that there was not in the whole house an handful of room unengaged. "Be that as it will," said one of the horsemen who had entered the gate, "there must be some found for my lord judge." At mention of that name the hostess was disturbed, saying, "Signor, the greatest difficulty is my want of beds: but if his lordship hath brought one along with him, as I suppose he hath, he is very welcome to come in; I and my husband will quit our own apartment to accommodate his worship." "Be it so," said the attendant. By this time a person had alighted from the coach, who, by his garb, immediately shewed the nature of his rank and office; for his long robe, with high sleeves tucked up, plainly distinguished him to be a judge, as the servant had affirmed. He led by the hand a young lady seemingly sixteen years of age, dressed in a riding suit, and so sprightly, beautiful, and genteel, as to raise the admiration of all who beheld her: so that those

who

who had not seen Dorothea, Lucinda, and Zorayda then present, would have thought it a very difficult task to find another woman of equal beauty. Don Quixote seeing the judge and young lady as they entered, pronounced with great solemnity, "Your worship may securely enter and recreate yourself in this castle, which, though narrow and inconvenient, there is no narrowness and inconvenience in this world, but what will make room for arms and letters; especially, if they have for their guide and conductor such beauty as that which accompanies the letters of your worship, in the person of that amiable young lady, to whom not only castles ought to open and unfold their gates, but also rocks divide, and mountains bow their heads at her approach. Enter, I say, this paradise, where you will find stars and suns to accompany that heaven which you have brought hither. Here you will find arms in perfection, and beauty in excess."

The judge marvelled greatly at this address of the knight, whom he earnestly considered, no less surprized at his figure than his words, without knowing what reply to make, so much was he confounded at both; when he was relieved by the appearance of Lucinda, Dorothea, and Zorayda, who upon hearing the news of their arrival, and the landlady's description of the young beauty, had come out to welcome and receive her: the beauteous ladies of the inn welcomed this beauteous damsel; while Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the curate, paid their compliments to the judge, in the most civil and polite terms. He was more and more astonished at what he saw and heard, though he could easily perceive that his fellow-lodgers were persons of rank and consequence: but the mein, visage, and figure of Don Quixote baffled all his conjectures. Compliments having thus passed on all sides, and the conveniences of the inn being duly considered, it was agreed, as before, that all the ladies should sleep to-

gether in the forementioned apartment, and the men sit in another room to guard them. The judge was very well satisfied that his daughter (for such the young maiden was) should lodge with the other ladies, she herself willingly consenting to the proposal; and what with part of the innkeeper's narrow bed, and the half of that which the judge brought along with him, they made shift to pass the night more agreeably than they expected.

The captive, who, from the first moment he beheld the judge, felt his heart throb with a sort of intimation, that this was his own brother, asked of one of the servants that attended him his master's name, with the place of his nativity. The footman replied, that his name was the licentiate Juan Perez de Viedma; and born, as he had been informed, in the mountains of Leon. This information, together with what he himself had before observed, confirmed him in the opinion that he was his brother, who, by his father's advice, had followed his studies. Transported with this discovery, he called aside Don Fernando, the curate, and Cardenio, to whom he imparted the affair, and assured them that the judge was his own brother, by the servant's report, so far on his way to the West Indies in quality of supreme judge of Mexico. He understood also by the same channel, that the young lady was his daughter, whose birth had cost the mother her life; and that he was very much enriched by his wife's fortune, which had been settled on the children of the marriage. The captive, therefore, consulted them about the method he should take to make himself known, or rather to be assured beforehand, whether, upon the discovery, his brother would be ashamed of his poverty, or receive him with the bowels of affection. "Leave that task to my conduct, signor captain, said the curate; though there is all the reason in the world to believe that you will meet with a brotherly reception; for

for the virtue and prudence that appear in his courteous demeanour, give no indications of his being proud and unnatural; but rather declare, that he knows how to consider the accidents of fortune in the right point of view." "Nevertheless, replied the captain, I would not willingly disclose myself of a sudden, but prepare him by some round about insinuation." "I have already told you, answered the curate, that I will manage the affair to your mutual satisfaction." By this time, the cloth * being laid, and every body sat down to table, except the captive and the ladies, who supped in their own apartment, the curate addressed himself to the judge, saying, "I had once a comrade of your lordship's name at Constantinople, where I was a slave for many years. He was one of the bravest soldiers, and best officers in the Spanish infantry; but his misfortunes were equal to his valour and ability." "Dear sir, cried the judge, what was that officer's name?" "He was called Ruy Perez de Viedma, replied the priest, and a native of some town in the mountains of Leon. He told me a circumstance that happened between his father, two brothers and himself, which, had it not been affirmed by a person of his veracity, I should have looked upon as one of those tales which old women tell by the fireside in winter: for he said, his father divided his estate equally among his three sons, whom he, at the same time, enriched with advice more salutary than any that ever Cato gave. This I know, the choice he made of going into the army succeeded so well, that in a few years, by his gallant behaviour, and without any other assistance than that of his extraordinary virtue, he rose to be captain of foot, and saw himself in the strait road of becoming a field-officer very soon: but there, where he had reason to expect the smiles of fortune, she proved most unkind,

* This is the second time they have sat down to supper in one night. Vide p. 146.

he having lost her, with his liberty, on that glorious day of the battle at Lepanto, in which it was found by so many Christians. I was taken in the goleta, and, after various vicissitudes, we happened to be fellow-slaves at Constantinople, from whence he was transported to Algiers, where he met with one of the strangest adventures that ever was known."

Then the curate briefly recapitulated the story of Zorayda, to which the judge listened with more attention than ever he had yielded on the bench*. But the priest brought it no farther than the period when the French corsairs plundered the Christians who were in the bark; describing the poverty and distress to which they had reduced his comrade and the beautiful Moor; and observing, that he did not know what further befel them, nor whether they had arrived in Spain, or been carried into France.

The captain stood at some distance behind, listening to what the curate said, and observing the emotions of his brother, who seeing that the curate had made an end of his story, uttered a profound sigh, saying, while the tears gushed from his eyes, "O signor! if you knew how nearly I am concerned in what you have related, you would not wonder at these tears, which, in spite of all my fortitude and discretion, trickle from mine eyes. That valiant captain whom you have mentioned is my father's eldest son, who, being more brave and noble-minded than my youngest † brother and me, chose the honourable exercise of arms, which was one of the three paths proposed by our father in his advice, as you seem to have been informed by your companion

* A judge in Spanish is called Oyder, i. e. Hearer, and the original literally translated is, "The hearer was never so much as a hearer before."

† Cervantes seems to have forgot that the judge was the youngest of the three brothers, the second having gone to the Indies.

in adversity. I followed that of letters, in which God hath been pleased to reward my diligence with that station which you see I now maintain: my younger brother is at present in Peru, so rich, that his remittances to my father and me have made large amends for the small sum he carried with him at first; and even enabled the old gentleman fully to indulge his liberal disposition, empowering me also to prosecute my studies, with more honour and decency, until I acquired the post I now enjoy. My father is still alive, though daily pining with the desire of hearing from his eldest son, and putting up petitions to Heaven, incessantly, that his own eyes may not be closed for ever, until he shall have seen those of his first-born in life. What gives me a great deal of surprize is, that a person of his discretion should, in the midst of such trouble and affliction, or even in his prosperity, omit writing to his father; for if he, or either of us, had known his situation, he should have had no occasion to wait for the miracle of the cane, in obtaining his liberty; but, at present, the uncertainty of his fate gives me the greatest concern, as it is doubtful whether those French have set him at liberty, or taken away his life, to conceal their robbery. This apprehension will convert the joy and satisfaction with which I undertook my journey, into melancholy and despondence. O my dear brother! would to Heaven I knew where thou art, that I might go and free thee from all trouble and affliction, though at the expence of my own. Who shall carry the news of thy being alive to our aged father; that, although thou art shut up in the deepest dungeon of Barbary, thou mayest be delivered by my brother's riches, and my own! O generous and lovely Zorayda! who shall requite thy benevolence to my brother, be present at the regeneration of thy soul, and assist at the nuptials which would afford such pleasure to us all!"

These, and many other exclamations, the judge pronounced

pronounced with such symptoms of sorrow, at the news he had received of his brother, that all the hearers sympathized with him in the expressions of his grief. The curate, seeing every thing succeed to his own expectation and the captain's desire, was unwilling to protract the judge's anguish, and the impatience of the whole company; so rising from the table, and going into the other apartment, he led out Zorayda, who was followed by Lucinda, Dorothea, and the young lady lately arrived; then, taking in his other hand the captain, who stood waiting to see what he intended, he went into the room where the judge and the rest of the gentlemen sat, and presenting them both, said, "Dry your tears, my lord judge, and enjoy the completion of your wish; behold your worthy brother, and virtuous sister-in-law: this is captain Viedma, and that the beautiful Moor who behaved so generously to him in his distress: the French corsairs have reduced them to this extremity, that you may have an opportunity of displaying the liberality of your noble breast."

The captain ran to embrace his brother, who kept him off with both hands fixed on his shoulders, that he might consider him the more attentively; but no sooner did he recollect his features, than he flew into his arms, and shed a flood of tears of joy, while the greatest part of those who were present wept in concert at the affecting scene. The expressions of both the brothers, and their mutual demonstrations of affection, are, I believe, scarce to be conceived, much less described. They briefly recounted their adventures to each other, and manifested the genuine flame of fraternal affection. There the judge embraced Zorayda, making her a tender of all his wealth; there he commanded his daughter to receive her with open arms; there the mutual caresses of the beautiful Christian and lovely Moor renewed the tears of the whole company; there

Don

Don Quixote silently observed these surprising accidents, which he wholly attributed to the chimeras of knight-errantry; there it was concerted that the captain and Zorayda should return to Sevil with his brother, from whence they could advertise their father of the liberty and arrival of his son; that the old gentleman, being still able to undertake such a journey, might come and be present at the baptism and nuptials of his daughter in law; as it would be impossible for the judge to go far out of his way, because he was informed, that in a month the flota would set sail from Sevil for New Spain; and it would be extremely inconvenient for him to lose his passage. In short, the whole company were exceedingly rejoiced at the captive's good fortune; and two thirds of the night being already exhausted, they agreed to retire and repose themselves during the remaining part of it; while Don Quixote undertook to guard the castle from the assaults of any giant or wicked adventurer that might possibly covet the vast treasure of beauty which it contained. Those of his acquaintance thanked him for his courteous offer, and afterwards gave an account of his strange disorder to the judge, who was not a little diverted with the detail of his extravagance. Sancho Panza alone was distracted at their sitting up so late; though in point of lodging, he was better accommodated than all the rest; for he made his bed of the furniture of his ass, which cost him so dear, as will hereafter be seen.

The ladies having retired to their apartment, and every other person disposed of himself as tolerably as he could, Don Quixote went out to keep guard at the castle-gate, according to his promise; and a little before morning, the ladies were serenaded by a voice so clear and well tuned, as to attract the attention of them all, especially of Dorothea, who was awake, and lay in the same bed with Donna Clara de Viedma, the judge's

judge's daughter. Nobody could imagine who the singer was, the voice being single, and unaccompanied by any instrument, and seeming to come sometimes from the stable, and sometimes from the court-yard. While they listened with equal surprize and attention, Cardenio came to the door, saying, "You that are not asleep, take notice, and you will hear the voice of a mule driver, who chaunts most enchantingly." When Dorothea told him that they had heard it already, he went away, while she, employing her whole attention when he began to sing again, could plainly distinguish the following words :

CHAP. XVI.

The agreeable story of the young muleteer, with many other strange incidents that happened in the inn.

I.

TOSS'D in a sea of doubts and fears,
Love's hapless mariner, I sail,
Where no inviting port appears
To screen me from the stormy gale.

II.

At distance view'd, a cheering star
Conducts me thro' the swelling tide :
A brighter luminary, far,
Than Palinurus e'er descri'd.

III.

My soul attracted by its blaze,
Still follows where it points the way,
And while attentively I gaze,
Considers not how far I stray.

IV.

But female pride reserv'd and shy,
Like clouds that deepen on the day,
Oft shroud it from my longing eye,
When most I need the genial ray.

O lovely

V.

O lovely star, so pure and bright !
Whose splendour feeds my vital fire,
The moment thou deny'st thy light,
Thy lost adorer will expire !

Here the musician pausing, Dorothea thought it was a pity Clara should not hear such an excellent voice ; therefore, by gently jogging, she waked her, saying, " I ask pardon, my dear Clara, for disturbing you ; but my intention, in so doing, was to regale you with one of the best voices that ever you heard." Clara, being still half asleep, did not at first understand what she said, which, at her desire Dorothea repeated ; and the young lady listened accordingly : but scarce had she heard two lines of the song, which was now resumed, when she began to tremble as violently as if she had been seized with a severe fit of the ague, saying, while she hugged Dorothea, " Ah ! dear lady of my life and soul, why did you wake me ? The greatest favour that fortune could at present bestow, would be to keep both my eyes and ears fast shut, that I might neither see nor hear that unfortunate musician." " What do you mean, my dear child ? answered Dorothea ; consider what you say, he that sings is a young muleteer." " Ah, no ! replied Clara, he is a young gentleman of great fortune, and so much master of my heart, that unless he quits it of his own accord, it shall remain eternally in his possession." Dorothea was surprised at this passionate declaration of such a young creature, who seemed to have so much more sensibility than could be expected from her tender years ; and said to her, " Truly, Donna Clara, you talk in such a manner, that I do not understand you. Pray, explain yourself, and tell me the meaning of those expressions, about fortune and heart, and that musician, whose voice hath
thrown

thrown you into such disorder : but say no more at present ; for I would not, by attending to your transports, lose the pleasure of hearing the singer, who now seems to be tuning his voice, and preparing to give us another song." " With all my heart," said Clara, stopping her ears with her fingers, to the further admiration of Dorothea, who, listening attentively, heard the musician proceed in these words :

I

ASPIRING hope, thou, unconfin'd,
Pursu'st th' imaginary path,
Thro' woods, and rocks, and waves combin'd,
Defying danger, toil, and death.

II.

No laurel shall adorn his brow,
No happiness the sluggard crown,
Who tamely can to fortune bow,
And slumber on th' inglorious down.

III.

The joys unmatch'd bestow'd by love,
Can never be too dearly priz'd,
For, undeny'd examples prove
What's cheaply bought, is soon despised.

IV.

Success, by the consenting fair,
Is oft to perseverance given ;
Then wherefore should my soul despair
Of mounting from this earth to heaven.

Here the voice ended : and Clara's sighs beginning afresh, kindled Dorothea's curiosity to know the cause of such agreeable music and grievous lamentation ; she therefore now desired to hear what her bedfellow had before proffered to impart : then Clara, fearful of being overheard by Lucinda, crept close to Dorothea, and applying her mouth to her ear, so that she could

securely

secure
dam,
gentle
court,
though
ter, a
young
got his
and in
the w
and sig
and ex
nature
made
stand
should
propo
to cor
him a
mine
lattice
person
him f
flask
the tin
being
opport
stand,
see him
having
at wh
ing at
a mule
to kno
printe
joy an
unperc
Vor

secretly speak without being perceived, " Dear madam, said she, that finger is the son of an Arragonian gentleman who is lord of two towns, and when at court, lives opposite to my father's house : and although our windows are covered with canvases in winter, and lattices in summer, I know not how this young gentleman, while he prosecuted his studies, got sight of me, either at church, or somewhere else ; and in short, being smitten, disclosed his passion from the windows of his own apartment, by so many tears and significant expressions, that I believed him sincere, and even loved him in my turn, without knowing the nature of my own desires. Among other signs, he made that of joining his hands, giving me to understand that he would take me to wife ; and though I should have been extremely glad to comply with that proposal, as I was alone and motherless, I had nobody to consult, and therefore let it rest, without granting him any other favour, except (when his father and mine were abroad) that of lifting up the canvases or lattice, that he might have a more perfect view of my person ; and this condescension always transported him so much, that I was afraid he would have run stark mad with joy : in the midst of this commerce, the time of my father's departure drew near, of which being informed, tho' not by me, for I never had an opportunity of telling him, he fell sick, as I understand, of grief ; so that, when we set out, I could not see him, as I wished, to indulge one parting look : but having travelled two days, just as I entered the place at which we lodged last night, I perceived him standing at the gate, disguised so naturally in the habit of a mulcteer, that it would have been impossible for me to know him, had not his image been so deeply imprinted on my soul. The sight of him filled me with joy and surprize ; and he gazed upon me by stealth, unperceived by my father, from whom he always con-

ceals his face, when he crosses the road before me, or is obliged to appear at the inns where we lodge: knowing therefore who he is, and that he travels on foot, undergoing so much hardship and fatigue for love of me, I am half dead with grief and anxiety, and wheresoever he sets his feet, there I fix my pitying eyes: I know not what he intends by thus following me, nor how he could manage to escape from his father, who loves him tenderly, because he has no heir but him; and the young gentleman deserves all his affection, as you will perceive when you see him. I can moreover assure you what he sings is the product of his own head; for I have been told that he is a great scholar, and an excellent poet: every time I behold him, or hear him sing, I start and tremble from head to foot, being afraid that he will be known by my father, and thus our mutual love be discovered; for, tho' I never spoke to him in my life, my passion is so violent, that without him I shall not be able to live. This, dear madam, is all I can say concerning that musician, whose voice hath given you such pleasure: and is alone sufficient to convince you, that he is not a muleteer, but the lord of towns and hearts, as I have described him."

"Enough, Donna Clara (said Dorothea, kissing her with great affection), say no more; but wait with patience till the approach of a new day, when I hope in God, to manage matters so well, as to bring such a virtuous beginning to an happy end." "Ah, madam! replied the young lady, what happy end can be expected, seeing his father is a man of such rank and fortune, that he would think me unworthy to be the servant, much less the wife of his son? and as to marrying him without my own father's consent, I would not do it for the whole universe. All I desire is, that the young gentleman would return; perhaps his absence, and the length of the journey we have undertaken,

taken, will alleviate the uneasiness I at present feel, tho' I must own, I believe that remedy will have small effect. I cannot conceive what the deuce is the matter with me; nor how t.^s same love got entrance into my heart, considering how young we both are; for I really believe we are of the same age, and my father says, that till Michaelmas next, I shall not be sixteen." Dorothea could not help laughing at these innocent observations of Donna Clara, to whom she said, "Let us sleep, my dear, during the little that I believe remains of the night: God will grant us a new day, and if my skill fails me not, every thing will succeed to our wish."

They accordingly went to rest, and a general silence prevailed over the whole house, in which there was not a soul awake, except the innkeeper's daughter and her maid Maritornes, who by this time, being acquainted with the extravagant humour of Don Quixote, and knowing that he was then without the gate, keeping guard in arms, and on horseback, determined to play some trick upon him, or, at least, divert themselves in listening to his folly.

The inn chancing to have no window nor opening towards the field, but a hole thro' which they took in their straw; this pair of * demi ladies there took their station, and observed Don Quixote, who sat on horseback, leaning upon his lance, and breathing from time to time such profound and doleful sighs, as seemed to tear his very soul: they likewise heard him pronounce, in a soft, complacent, and amorous tone, "O my dear mistress, Dulcinea del Toboso! thou perfection of beauty, scope and sum total of discretion, cabinet of good humour, depository of virtue, and lastly the idea of all that is useful, chaste, and delectable in this life! in what art thou at present employed? Art thou reflect-

* In the original *Demi-Donzellas*, equivalent to the modern term *Demireps*.

ing upon thy captive knight, who voluntarily subjects himself to such dangers, with the sole view of serving thee? Give me some information of my love, thou three-faced luminary! who now, perhaps, with envious eyes, beholdest her walking through some gallery of her sumptuous palace, or leaning over some balcony, revolving in her mind, how, without impairing the delicacy of her honour, she may assuage the torments that this heart endures on her account; how she may crown my sufferings with glory; my care with comfort; in fine, my death with new life, and my service with reward: and thou sun, who by this time must be busy in harnessing thy steeds to light the world, and to enjoy the sight of her who is the sovereign of my soul, I intreat thee to salute her in my behalf; but in thy salutation, beware of touching her amiable countenance, else I shall be more jealous of thee than ever thou wast of that nimble ingrate, who made thee sweat so much along the plains of Thessaly, or banks of Peneus; for I do not remember through which thou ran'st, so jealous and enamoured."

So far had the knight proceeded in this piteous exclamation, when the innkeeper's daughter whispered softly, "Sir knight, will your worship be pleased to come this way?" Hearing this invitation, he lifted up his eyes, and by the light of the moon, which was then in full splendour, perceived them beckon to him from the straw hole, which he mistook for a window, adorned with gilded bars, suitable to the grandeur of such a magnificent castle as the inn appeared: then his crazy imagination instantly suggested, as before, that the beauteous damsel, daughter of the constable, being captivated by his person, intended again to solicit his love. On this supposition, that he might not seem discourteous or ungrateful, he turned Rozinante, and rising up to the hole, no sooner perceived the two ladies, than he said, "I am extremely concerned.

most

most beautiful lady, that you have fixed your amorous inclinations where it is impossible they should meet with that return which is due to your rank and qualifications ; but you ought not to impute your disappointment to any fault in me, whom love hath rendered incapable of yielding my heart to any other but to her, who at first sight took absolute possession of my soul. Pardon my refusal, honoured madam, and retire to your apartment, without seeking to explain your sentiments more fully, that I may not appear insensible or ungrateful ; and if your love can find in me the power of giving you any other sort of satisfaction, you may freely command my service ; for I swear by that absent and amiable enemy of mine, to gratify your wish immediately ; even if you should desire to have a lock of Medusa's hair, which was altogether composed of snakes, or the rays of the sun confined in a vial."

" Sir knight, answered Maritornes, my lady has no occasion for either of these things." " What then is your lady's pleasure, discreet duenna?" resumed the knight. " Only the favour of one of your beautiful hands, replied Maritornes, with which she may, in some measure, indulge the longing desire that brought her to this straw hole, so much to the danger of her reputation, that if she should be detected by her father, the first slice of his indignation would cost her an ear at least." " I would fain see him take that liberty, said Don Quixote : but he will take care to refrain from any such acts of barbarity, unless he has a mind, I should bring him to the most calamitous exit that ever happened to a father, for having laid violent hands upon the delicate members of his enamoured daughter."

Maritornes concluding that he would certainly grant the request, and having already determined on what she was to do, ran down to the stable, and laid

hold of the halter belonging to Sancho's ass, with which she instantly returned, just when Don Quixote had made shift to set his feet on the saddle that he might reach the gilded window, at which he imagined the wounded damsel was standing: presenting the fore his hand, "Receive, madam," said he, "that hand, or rather that chastiser of all evil-doers; receive, I say, that hand, which was never touched by any other woman, not even by her who is in possession of my whole body. I do not present it to be kissed; but that you may contemplate the contexture of its nerves, the knittings of the muscles, the large and swelling veins; from whence you may conjecture what strength must reside in the arm to which it belongs." "That we shall see presently," said Maritornes, who having made a running knot on the halter, fixed it upon his wrist, and descending from the hole, made fast the other end to the bolt of the hay loft door. The knight feeling the roughness of this bracelet said, "Your ladyship seems to rasp rather than to clasp my hand: do not treat it so cruelly; for it is not to blame for what you suffer from my inclination; nor is it just that such a small part should bear the whole brunt of your indignation: consider that one who is such a friend to love, ought not to be so attached to revenge."

All these expostulations of Don Quixote were uttered in vain; for as soon as Maritornes had tied him up, she and her companion, ready to expire with laughing, left him fastened in such a manner, that it was impossible for him to get loose: thus, while he stood on Rozinante's back, with his whole arm thrust up into the straw hole, and fast tied to the bolt of the door, he was in the utmost apprehension and dread, that if his horse should make the least motion to either side, he must lose his support, and the weight of his whole body hang by one arm; so that he durst

not

not venture to stir ; though he might have expected, from the patience and peaceful disposition of Rozinante, that he would stand motionless for a whole century. In short, finding himself thus tucked up, and the ladies vanished, he imagined that the whole had been effected by the power of enchantment, which he had experienced once before, in that same castle, when he was belaboured by the enchanted Moor of a carrier ; and cursed, within himself, his want of conduct and discretion. in entering a second time that fortress in which he had fared so ill at first ; it being a maxim among knights errant, that when they prove an adventure, without success, they conclude it is reserved for another, and therefore think it unnecessary to make a second trial. Nevertheless, he pulled with intention to disengage his arm, but he was so well secured, that all his efforts were ineffectual : true it is he pulled with caution, that Rozinante might not be disturbed ; and though he had a longing desire of sitting down upon the saddle again, he found that he must either continue in his present upright posture, or part with his hand. Then he began to wish for the sword of Amadis, against which no enchantment could prevail ; then cursed his fortune ; then exaggerated the loss which the world would sustain, while he remained enchanted, as he firmly believed himself to be ; then he reflected anew upon his beloved Dulcinea del Toboso ; then he called to his trusty squire Sancho Panza, who stretched upon the pannel of his ass, and buried in sleep, at that instant retained no remembrance of the mother that bore him ; then he implored the assistance of the two sages Lirgando and Alquise ; then he invoked his good friend Urganda, for succour in his distress : and in fine, the morning found him in that situation, so distracted and perplexed, that he roared aloud like a bull, without expecting that the day would put an end to this disaster, which
he

he thought would be eternal, believing himself actually enchanted: and this opinion was confirmed, by his seeing that Rozinante scarce offered to stir; for he was persuaded, that in this manner, without eating, drinking, or sleeping, he and his horse would continue until the evil influence of the stars should pass over, or some other sage of superior skill disengage them from their enchantment.

But for once he was mistaken in his calculation; for day had scarce begun to dawn, when four men on horseback arrived at the inn, well mounted and accoutred with carabines hanging at their saddle bows: the knight perceiving from the place, where, in spite of his misfortune, he still kept guard, that they thundered for entrance at the gate, which was still shut, called in an arrogant and haughty tone, "Knights or squires, or whosoever you are, you have no business to make such a noise at the gate of this castle; for it is very plain, that either the people within are asleep, or unaccustomed, at these hours, to open the fortress, which you cannot enter before the sun rise. Retire therefore, and wait until the day be further advanced, and then we shall see whether or not you have any title to be admitted."

"What the devil of a fortress or castle is this, that we must observe such ceremony!" said one of the company: "If you are the innkeeper, order somebody to open the door: we are all travellers, and only want to bait, that we may forthwith proceed on our journey; for we are in haste." "Gentlemen," replied Don Quixote, "do you think I resemble an innkeeper?" "I don't know what you resemble," answered the other: "but this I know, that you talk nonsense, in calling this inn a castle." "A castle it is," cried the knight, "and one of the best in this province; nay, at this very instant, it contains those who have wore crowns on their heads, and wielded
sceptres

sceptres in their hands." "Or rather the reverse," said the traveller; "that is, the sceptre on the head, and crown in the hand *; but perhaps, there may be within some company of strollers who frequently wear these crowns and sceptres you mention; for otherwise, in such a sorry inn, without any sort of noise or stir, I cannot believe that any persons of such note would lodge." "You know little of the world," replied Don Quixote, "since you are so ignorant of the events that happen in knight-errantry."

The other horsemen, being tired with this dialogue that passed between the knight and their companion, began again to knock and bawl with such vociferation that the landlord and all the persons in the inn waking, rose to see who called so furiously: about this time, one of the horses belonging to the travellers drew near, and smelled at Rozinante, who, sad and melancholy, with his ears hanging down, stood supporting his outstretched master, without stirring; but at length being made of flesh, though he seemed to have been carved out of a block, he was sensible of the civility, and turned about to repay the compliment to the courteous stranger; and scarce had he moved one step when both his master's feet slipping from the saddle, he would have tumbled to the ground, had he not hung by his arm, which endured such torture in the shock, that he verily believed it was cut off by the wrist, or torn away by the shoulder. He was suspended so low, that the tops of his toes almost touched the ground; a circumstance that increased his calamity; for feeling how little he wanted of being firmly sustained, he stretched and fatigued himself with endeavouring to set his feet upon the ground, like those wretches, who, in undergoing the strappado, being hoisted up a very little space, increase

* Alluding to the delinquents, who were branded and marked with these figures.

their own torment by their eager efforts to lengthen their bodies, misled by the vain hope of reaching the ground.

CHAP. XVII.

A continuation of the surprising events that happened in the inn.

DON Quixote actually made such a hideous outcry, that the innkeeper opened the door, and ran out to see what was the matter; while the strangers that remained without were no less astonished at his bellowing. Maritornes being also waked by the same noise, conjectured what might be the cause, and going straight to the hay loft, without being perceived, untied the halter that sustained him; so that the knight came to the ground, in sight of the landlord and strangers, who running up, asked what was the matter with him, and wherefore he cried so violently? Without answering one word, he loosed the tether from his wrist, and rising up, mounted Rozinante, braced his target, couched his lance, and making a pretty large circuit in the field, returned at a half gallop, pronouncing with great emphasis, "If any person whatever sayeth, that I have justly suffered enchantment, I here, with the permission of my lady princess Micomicona, gave him the lie, challenge, and defy him to single combat."

The travellers were amazed at his words; but their astonishment abated, when the innkeeper told them who Don Quixote was; observing that they ought not to mind what he did, because he was disordered in his brain: they then asked if he had seen a youth about fifteen years of age, dressed like a young muleteer, with such and such marks, giving an exact description of Donna Clara's lover. The landlord answered, there

were

were so many people in his house, that he could not possibly distinguish the person for whom they enquired; but one of them perceiving the judge's coach, "He must certainly be here, said he; for this is the coach which they say he followed: let one of us stay at the door, and the rest go in to search for him; it will also be proper that one go round the whole house, to prevent his escaping over the yard wall. This plan being agreed upon, two of them entered the inn, another remained at the door, and the fourth rode round the house to reconnoitre; while the landlord observing every thing that passed, could not conceive the meaning of all this care and diligence, although he believed they were in search of the youth whom they had described. By this time it was clear day light, and upon that account, as well as in consequence of Don Quixote's roaring, all the company were awake, and got up, especially Donna Clara and Dorothea, who had slept very little that night; the first being disturbed and alarmed, by reflecting that her lover was so near, and the other kept awake by the desire of seeing this pretended muleteer.

Don Quixote seeing that none of the travellers took the least notice of him, or made any answer to his defiance, was transported with rage and vexation; and if he could have recollected any law of chivalry, authorizing a knight-errant to undertake another enterprize, while he was under promise and oath to abstain from any adventure, until that in which he was engaged was already atchieved; he would have assaulted them all together, and forced them to reply, contrary to their inclination: but thinking it was neither expedient nor just to begin a new enterprize, until he had re-established the princess Micomicona on her throne; he chose to be silent, waiting to see the effects of that diligence practised by the new comers, one of whom found the youth they came in quest of, sleeping by the side of a muleteer,

muleteer, and little dreaming that any body was in search of him ; much less that he was in any danger of being discovered. The man, however, took him by the arm, saying, " Truly, signor Don Lewis, this is a very suitable dress for one of your quality ; and the bed in which you now lie extremely well adapted to the tenderness and delicacy in which your mother brought you up."

The youth rubbed his sleepy eyes, and looking steadfastly at the person who held him by the arm, no sooner perceived that he was one of his father's servants, than he was so much surprized and confounded, that for a good while he could not speak one word : while the domestic proceeded, saying, " At present, Don Lewis, there is nothing else to be done, but to exert your patience, and return home, if you are not resolved that your father and my lady shall visit the other world ; for nothing else can be expected from their anxiety at your absence." " How did my father get notice that I travelled this road, and in this habit ?" said Don Lewis. " A student, replied the servant, to whom you imparted your intention, was so much moved by the sorrow that took possession of your parents the moment you were missed, that he disclosed your scheme to your father, who instantly dispatched four of his domestics in search of you ; and we are all here at your service, infinitely rejoiced that we have now an opportunity of returning speedily, and carrying you back to the longing eyes of those by whom you are so much beloved." " That may depend upon my own will and the appointment of heaven," said the young nobleman. " What should you will, or heaven ordain, but your immediate return, which indeed you cannot possibly avoid."

All this conversation was overheard by the muleteer with whom Don Lewis lay, who got up immediately, and going to Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the ladies, who were already dressed, told them how the man called

ed

ed hi
thing
sle's
yout
matio
voice
all th
who l
fer an
theref
talkin
the sa
follow
ed Cas
of the
his tu
of his
but th
affecte
ed her
denio
saying
and th
the fo
round
out lo
but he
with t
which
domest
would,
that if
ged to
ver do,
dead :
me aw
M, B
VOL.

ed his fellow servant Don, and communicated every thing that passed between them, concerning the domestic's proposal of conducting him home again, and the youth's refusal to comply with his desire. This information, together with the knowledge of that sweet voice with which heaven had endowed him, excited in all the company a desire of knowing more particularly who he was, and even of assisting him, should they offer any violence to his inclination: for this purpose, therefore, they repaired to the place where he still stood, talking and disputing with his father's servant. At the same time, Dorothea coming out of her apartment, followed by Donna Clara, in the utmost confusion, called Cardenio aside, and briefly related to him the story of the musician and the judge's daughter: and he, in his turn, informed her of what passed on the arrival of his father's servants. This he spoke not so softly, but that he was overheard by Clara, who was so much affected at the news, that if Dorothea had not supported her, she would have fallen to the ground: but Cardenio desired them to retire into their apartment, saying, he would endeavour to set every thing to rights, and they accordingly followed his advice. Mean while, the four, who had come in quest of Don Lewis, stood round him in the inn, persuading him to return without loss of time, and console his melancholy father; but he assured them, he could by no means comply with their request, until he had finished an affair, upon which his honour, life, and soul depended. Then the domestics began to be more urgent, protesting they would, in no shape, return without him; and declaring, that if he would not go willingly, they would be obliged to carry him off by force. "That you shall never do," replied Don Lewis, "unless you carry me off dead: and indeed you may as well kill me, as force me away in any shape."

Most of the people in the house were now gathered
 VOL. II. U together

together to hear the dispute, particularly Cardenio. Don Fernando, his companions, the judge, curate, barber, and Don Quixote, who thought it was no longer necessary to guard the castle, Cardenio being already acquainted with the young man's story, asked what reason the domestics had to carry off the youth, contrary to his own inclination: "Our motive," replied one of the four, "is to retrieve his father's life, which is in danger of being lost, on account of this young gentleman's absence." To this declaration Don Lewis answered, "There is no reason why I should here give an account of my affairs; I am free, and will return, if I please; otherwise none of you shall compel me into your measures." "Your honour will, I hope, hear reason, said the servant; or if you should not, it will be enough for us to execute our errand, as we are in duty bound."

Here the judge desiring to know the whole affair from the bottom, the man, having lived in the same neighbourhood, knew him, and replied, "My lord judge, don't you know that young gentleman is your neighbour's son, who hath absented himself from his father's house, in a dress altogether unbecoming his quality, as your lordship may perceive?" Then the judge looking at him more attentively, recollected his features, and embracing him, said, "What a frolic is this, Don Lewis? or what powerful cause hath induced you to come hither in a garb so ill suited to your rank and fortune?" The tears gushing into the young man's eyes, he could not answer one word to the judge, who desired the four domestics to make themselves easy, for all would be well; then taking Don Lewis by the hand, he led him aside, and asked again the cause of his coming in that manner.

While he was employed in this and other questions, they heard a great noise at the inn-door, occasioned by two men, who had lodged all night in the house,

and

and who seeing every body intent upon knowing the business of the four last comers, resolved to march off without paying their reckoning: but the innkeeper, who minded his own affairs more than those of any other person, stopped them on the threshold, demanded his money, and upbraided them for their evil intention, with such abusive language, as provoked them to answer by dint of fists, which they began to employ so dexterously, that the poor landlord found himself under the necessity of calling aloud for assistance. His wife and daughter seeing no body so idle, consequently so proper for the purpose, as Don Quixote, the damsel addressed him in these words; "Sir Knight, I beseech your worship, by the valour which God hath given you, to go to the assistance of my poor father, whom two wicked men are now beating to a jelly." To this request the knight replied, with great leisure and infinite phlegm, "Beautiful young lady, I cannot at present grant your petition, being restricted from intermeddling in any other adventure, until I shall have accomplished one, in which my honour is already engaged: all that I can do for your service is this, run and desire your father to maintain the combat as well as he can, and by no means allow himself to be overcome until I go and ask permission of the princess Micomicona, to succour him in his distress; and, if I obtain it, be assured that I will rescue him from all danger." "Sinner that I am!" cried Maritornes, who was then present, "before your worship can obtain that permission, my master will be in the other world." "Allow me, madam," answered Don Quixote, "to go and solicit the licence I mention, which if I obtain, I shall not make much account of his being in the other world, from whence I will retrieve him, though all its inhabitants should combine to oppose me, at least I shall take such vengeance on those who have

sent him thither, as will give you full and ample satisfaction."

So saying, he went and kneeled before Dorothea, begging, in the stile and manner of knight-errantry, that her highness would be pleased to give him permission to run and assist the constable of the castle, who was at that time involved in a very grievous disaster. The princess having very graciously granted his request, he braced on his target, unsheathed his sword, and ran to the gate where the two guests still continued pummelling the landlord; but as soon as he beheld them, he stopped short, as if suddenly surprized; and when Maritornes and her mistress asked what hindered him from giving assistance to their master and husband, "I am hindered," answered the knight, "by a law, which will not permit me to use my sword against plebeians; but call hither my squire Sancho, for to him it belongs, and is peculiar to engage in such vengeance and defence."

This transaction happened on the very field of battle, while kicks and cuffs were dealt with infinite dexterity, to the no small prejudice of the innkeeper's carcass, and the rage of his wife, daughter, and Maritornes, who were half-distracted at seeing the cowardice of Don Quixote, and the distress of their lord and master. But let us here leave him a while; for he shall not want one to assist him; or else, let him suffer with patience, and hold his tongue as becomes those who rashly undertake adventures which they have not strength to achieve; and let us retreat backwards, about fifty yards, to see what answer Don Lewis made to the judge, whom he left enquiring the cause of his travelling on foot in such a mean habit. The youth, squeezing both his hands with great eagerness, in token of the excessive grief that wrung his heart, and shedding a flood of tears, replied to this question, "Dear sir, I can give you no other reason, but that

from

from the first moment that fortune made us neighbours, and Heaven ordained that I should see Donna Clara, your daughter and my delight, I, that instant, made her mistress of my heart; and if your inclination, my real lord and father, does not oppose my happiness, this very day she shall be my lawful wife: for her I forsook my father's house, and disguised myself in this manner, with a resolution to follow whithersoever she should go, directing my views towards her, like the arrow to its mark, and the needle to the pole; though she knows no more of my passion than what she may have understood from the tears which, at a distance, she hath often seen me shed. You yourself, my lord, know the rank and fortune of my father, whose sole heir I am: if you think that a motive sufficient for venturing to make me perfectly happy, receive me immediately as your son; and though my father, prompted, perhaps, by other views, should be disobliged at the blessing which I have chosen for myself, it is in the power of time to work greater changes and alterations than human prudence can foresee."

Here the enamoured youth left off speaking, and the judge remained in the utmost suspense; not only admiring the discretion with which Don Lewis had disclosed his passion, but also finding himself perplexed about the resolution he was to take, in such a sudden and unexpected affair. He therefore made no other reply for the present, but to desire he would make himself easy and detain his servants a day longer, that he might have time to consider what steps it would be most proper to take, for the satisfaction of all concerned. Don Lewis kissed his hands by force, and even bathed them with his tears; a circumstance sufficient to melt a heart of marble, much more that of the judge, who, being a man of prudence, had already conceived all the advantages of such a match for his daughter; tho' he wished it could be effected, if pos-

sible with the consent of the young man's father, who, he knew, had some pretensions to a title for his son.

By this time peace was re-established between the innkeeper and his two lodgers, who being persuaded by the arguments and exhortations of Don Quixote, more than by his threats, had paid their reckoning to the last farthing; and the servants of Don Lewis waited the result of the judge's advice, together with their master's resolution; when the devil, who is ever watchful, so ordered matters, that the barber should just then enter the inn; that very barber from whom Don Quixote had retrieved Mambrino's helmet, and Sancho Panza taken the furniture of his ass, which he had exchanged for his own. This individual shaver, as he led his beast to the stable, perceived Sancho employed in mending something that belonged to the pannel, and knowing him at first sight, assaulted the squire in a trice, crying, "Ha! Don thief, I have caught you at last. Restore my bason and pannel, with all the furniture you stole from me."

Sancho seeing himself so suddenly attacked, and hearing the reproachful language of his antagonist, with one hand laid fast hold on the pannel, and with the other bestowed upon the barber such a slap in the face, as bathed his whole jaws in blood. But for all that, he would not quit the pannel which he had also seized; on the contrary, he raised his voice so high as to alarm the whole company, and bring them to the scene of contention, crying, "Justice! help me in the king's name! this robber wants to murder me, because I endeavour to recover my own property." "You lie," answered the squire, "I am no robber; my lord Don Quixote won these spoils fairly in battle." The knight coming up among the rest, beheld, with infinite satisfaction, his squire so alert in offending and defending, and looking upon him from thence forward as a man of valour, resolved, in his heart, to have

have h
that o
well b
barber
he, "
belong
been p
all the
stable,
you w
his ba
give y
Beside
pannel
never

Don
no lo
whom
ground
appear
"Ger
percei
by ca
Mamb
and o
conqu
termie
my sq
trappi
with t
cordin
their
such t
of ch
ren,
which

have him dubbed with the first opportunity, confident that on him the order of knighthood would be very well bestowed. Among other things alledged by the barber in the course of the fray, "Gentlemen," said he, "that pannel belongs as much to me as my soul belongs to God; for I know it as well as if it had been produced by my own body; and though I had all the mind in the world, my ass, which is now in the stable, would not suffer me to tell a falsehood: since you will not take my word, pray go and try it upon his back, and if it does not fit him to a hair, I shall give you leave to call me the greatest liar upon earth. Besides, the very same day on which they took my pannel, they also robbed me of a new brass bason never hanfelled, that cost me a good crown*."

Don Quixote hearing this, could contain himself no longer, but interposed between the combatants, whom he parted, and depositing the pannel on the ground to be publicly viewed until the truth should appear, addressed himself thus to the spectators: "Gentlemen, you may now clearly and manifestly perceive how this honest squire errs in his judgment, by calling that a bason, which was, is, and shall be Mambrino's helmet: a piece of armour I won in fair and open battle, and now possess by the just laws of conquest. With regard to the pannel I will not intermeddle: all that I can say of the matter is, that my squire Sancho having asked permission to take the trappings of that coward's horse, and adorn his own with them, I gave him leave, and he took them accordingly; though I can give no other reason for their being now converted into a pannel, but that such transformations frequently happen in the events of chivalry: yet, as a confirmation of what I say, ren, Friend Sancho, and bring hither the helmet, which this honest man calls a bason."

* Literally, "Lady of a Crown."

"For God!" answered Sancho, "if your worship has no better proof of our honourable doings than what you mention, Mambrino's helmet will turn out a bason, as certainly as this honest man's trappings are transimographed into a pannel." Do what I order," replied the knight; "sure I am, every thing in this castle cannot be conducted by enchantment." Sancho went accordingly, and fetched his bason, or helmet of Mambrino, as his master called it, which Don Quixote taking in his hand, said, "Behold, gentlemen, with what face this plebeian can affirm that this is a bason, and not the helmet I have mentioned; now, I swear by the order of knighthood I profess, that this is the individual helmet which I took from him without the least addition or diminution." "Without all manner of doubt," said Sancho; "for since my master won it, to this good hour, he hath used it but in one battle, when he delivered those mischievous galley slaves; and if it had not been for that same bason-helmet he could not have come off so well: for there was a deadly shower of stones rained upon his pate in that storm."

CH A P. XVIII.

The decision of the doubts concerning Mambrino's helmet and the pannel; with a full and true account of many other adventures.

"GENTLEMEN," said the barber, "pray favour me with your opinion concerning what is affirmed by these gentlefolks, who so obstinately maintain that this is not a bason but a helmet?" "And if any one affirms to the contrary," replied Don Quixote, "I will make him sensible that he lies, if he be a knight; and if a plebeian, that he lies a thousand times." His own townsman, who was present all the while, being

being well acquainted with the knight's humour, resolved to encourage him in his extravagance, and carry on the joke for the diversion of the company: with this view he addressed himself to the other shaver, saying, "Mr Barber, or whosoever you are, you must know that I am of the same profession: I have had a certificate of my examination these twenty years; and know very well all the instruments of the art without excepting one: I was, moreover, a soldier in my youth, consequently can distinguish an helmet, a morrion, and a casque, with its beaver, together with every thing relating to military affairs; I mean the different kinds of armour wore by soldiers in the field: I say, under correction, and still with submission to better judgment, that the object now in dispute, which that worthy gentleman holds in his hand, is not only no barber's bason, but also, as far from being one as black is from white, or falsehood from truth. I likewise aver, that tho' it is an helmet, it is not entire." "You are certainly in the right," said Don Quixote, "for it wants one half, which is the beaver."

The curate, who by this time understood the intention of his friend, seconded his asseveration, which was also confirmed by Cardenio, Don Fernando, and his companions; and the judge himself would have bore a part in the jest, had he not been engrossed by the affair of Don Lewis; but that earnest business kept him in such perplexity of thought, that he could give little or no attention to the joke that was going forward.

"Good God!" cried the barber, with amazement, "is it possible that so many honourable persons should pronounce this bason to be a helmet? an assertion sufficient to astonish a whole university, let it be never so learned. Well: if that bason be an helmet, I suppose the pannel must be an horse's trappings too, as
this

this gentleman says." "To me it seems a pannel," replied the knight: "but, as I have already observed, I will not pretend to decide whether it be the pannel of an ass, or the furniture of a steed." "Don Quixote has no more to do but speak his opinion," said the curate; "for in affairs of chivalry, all these gentlemen, myself, and even the ladies, yield to his superior understanding." "By Heaven! gentlemen," cried the knight, "so many strange accidents have happened to me, twice that I have lodged in this castle, that I will not venture positively to affirm the truth of any thing that may be asked relating to it; for I imagine that every thing in this place is conducted by the power of enchantment. The first time I passed the night in this place, I was harassed extremely by an enchanted Moor that resides in the castle, while Sancho was almost as roughly handled by some of his attendants; and this very night I was suspended by one arm, for the space of two hours, without knowing how or wherefore I incurred that misfortune. For me, therefore, to give my opinion in a case of such perplexity, would be a rash decision: with regard to the helmet, which they say is a bason, I have already expressed my sentiments; but dare not give a definitive sentence, by declaring whether that be a pannel or horse's furniture. That I leave to the judgment of the good company; who, not being knights as I am, perhaps are not subjected to the enchantments of this place; but enjoying their faculties clear and undisturbed, can judge of these things as they really and truly are, not as they appear to my imagination." "Doubtless," replied Don Fernando, "signor Don Quixote manifests his own prudence, in observing, that to us belongs the determination of this affair, which, that it may be the better founded, I will, in private, take the opinions of this company, one by one,

one, and then openly declare the full result of my enquiry."

To those who were acquainted with the knight's humour, this proposal afforded matter of infinite diversion; but the rest being ignorant of the joke, looked upon it as a piece of downright madness: this was particularly the opinion of the domestics belonging to Don Lewis, which was even espoused by himself and three travellers just arrived, who seemed to be troopers of the holy brotherhood, as indeed they were: but he that almost ran distracted was the barber, whose bason was, even in his own sight, transformed into Mambrino's helmet, while he expected every moment that his pannel would be certainly declared the rich trappings and furniture of a horse. Every body laughed to see Don Fernando going about with great gravity, collecting opinions in whispers, that each might privately declare whether that jewel, about which there had been such obstinate disputes, was the pannel of an ass, or the furniture of a steed. Having received the answers of all those who knew Don Quixote, he pronounced aloud, "Truly, honest friend, I am quite tired with asking so many opinions; for every one to whom I put the question affirms it is downright distraction to call this a pannel, which is certainly the furniture of a horse, and that too of an excellent breed. Therefore you must e'en have patience; for in spite of you and the testimony of your ass to boot, an horse's furniture it must remain, as you have failed so egregiously in the proof of what you alledge." "May I never taste the joys of Heaven!" cried the transported barber, "if you are not all deceived! and so may my soul appear before God, as this appears to me a mere pannel, and not the furniture of an horse! but thus * might overcomes—I say no

* The original would be more literally translated, by saying, "The law's measure is the King's pleasure."

more, neither am I drunk, being fresh and fasting from every thing but sin."

The company laughed as heartily at the simplicity of the barber, as the extravagance of the knight, who, upon this decision, said, "Nothing now remains, but that every one should take his own again; and may * St Peter bless what God bestows." One of the four servants belonging to Don Lewis now interposed, saying, "If this be not a premeditated joke, I cannot persuade myself that people of sound understanding, such as all this company are or seem to be, should venture to say and affirm, that this is no bason, nor that a pannel; yet seeing this is both said and affirmed, I conceive there must be some mystery in thus insisting upon a thing so contrary to truth and experience; for, by God! (an oath he swore with great emphasis) all the people on earth shall never make me believe that this is not a barber's bason, or that not the pannel of an he-afs." "Why not of a she-afs?" said he curate. "That distinction makes no difference," said the servant; "nor has it any concern with the dispute, which is occasioned by your saying that it is not a pannel at all."

At the same time one of the troopers, who had entered and been witness to the quarrel and question, could no longer contain his choler and displeasure at what he heard, and therefore said in a furious tone, "If that is not a pannel, my father never begat me; and he that says, or shall say the contrary, must be drunk." "You lie, like an infamous scoundrel," replied Don Quixote, "who lifting up his lance, which he still kept in his hand, aimed such a stroke at the trooper's skull, that if he had not been very expeditious in shifting it, he would have been stretched at full length upon the ground, on which the weapon was shivered to pieces: the rest of the troop, seeing

* A bridal benediction.

their

their
crying
keep
and
the
not
turn
whic
Quix
Lew
the
rang
curat
wept
ed,
away
the
seize
away
the
exert
brou
his
rais
broth
ment
all
sion
comp
sugg
confu
nounc
"Le
and
On
pause
gentle
Vo

their companion so roughly handled, raised their voices, crying for help to the holy brotherhood: the inn-keeper being of that fraternity, ran in for his tillass and sword, and espoused the cause of his brethren; the domestics surrounded Don Lewis, that he might not escape in the scuffle; the barber seeing the house turned topsy-turvy, laid hold again of the pannel, which was at the same time seized by Sancho; Don Quixote attacked the troopers sword in hand; Don Lewis called to his servants to leave him, and go to the assistance of Cardenio and Don Fernando, who had ranged themselves on the side of Don Quixote; the curate exhorted, the landlady screamed, the daughter wept, Maritornes blubbered, Dorothea was confounded, Lucinda perplexed, and Donna Clara fainted away; the barber pummelled Sancho, who returned the compliment; one of the servants, presuming to seize Don Lewis by the arm, that he might not run away, the young gentleman gave him such a slap in the face, as bathed all his teeth in blood; the judge exerted himself in his defence. Don Fernando having brought one of the troopers to the ground, kicked his whole carcase to his heart's content: the landlord raised his voice again, roaring for help to the holy brotherhood: so that the whole inn was a scene of lamentation, cries, shrieks, confusion, dread, dismay, disaster, back strokes, cudgelling, kicks, cuffs, and effusion of blood. In the midst of this labyrinth, chaos, and composition of mischief, Don Quixote's imagination suggested, that he was all of a sudden involved in the confusion of Agramonte's camp; and therefore pronounced with a voice that made the whole inn resound, "Let every man forbear, put up his sword, be quiet and listen, unless he be weary of his life."

On hearing this exclamation, all the combatants paused, while he proceeded thus: "Did not I tell you, gentlemen, that this castle was enchanted, and doubt-

less, inhabited by a whole legion of devils ; as a proof of which, you may now perceive. with your own eyes, how the discord and mutiny in Agramonte's camp is translated hither : behold, in one place, we fight for a sword ; in another for a horse ; in a third for an eagle ; and in a fourth, for a helmet ; in short, we are all by the ears together, for we know not what. Advance, therefore, my lord judge, and Mr Curate, and in the persons of Agramonte and king Sobrino, re-establish peace among us ; for, by almighty God, it were wicked and absurd, that persons of our importance should be slain in such a frivolous cause."

The troopers, who did not understand the knight's stile, and found themselves very severely treated by Don Fernando, Cardenio, and their companions, would not be pacified ; but it was otherwise with the barber, who, in the scuffle, had lost both his pannel and beard : Sancho, who, like a faithful servant, minded the least hint of his master, willingly obeyed ; and the servants of Don Lewis were fain to be quiet, seeing how little they had got by concerning themselves in the fray ; the innkeeper alone insisted upon their chastising the insolence of that madman, who was every moment throwing the whole house into confusion ; at length, the disturbance was appeased, the pannel remained as an horse's furniture, till the day of judgment, the bason as an helmet, and the inn as a castle, in Don Quixote's imagination.

Every thing being thus amicably composed by the persuasion of the judge and priest, the servants of Don Lewis began again to press him, with great obstinacy, to set out with them for his father's house immediately ; and while he expostulated with them, the judge consulted with Don Fernando, Cardenio, and the curate, about what he should do on this occasion, imparting to them the declaration Don Lewis had made ; at last it was agreed that Don Fernando should tell

the

the servants who he was ; and express a desire, that Don Lewis should accompany him to Andalusia, where his brother the marquis should entertain him according to his rank and merit ; for he well knew the young gentleman was fixed in the determination of being cut to pieces, rather than return to his father at that time. The domestics being informed of Don Fernando's quality, and understanding the resolution of Don Lewis, determined amongst themselves, that three of them should return and give the father an account of what had happened, while the fourth should attend the young gentleman, until they should either come back for him, or know his father's pleasure.

In this manner was that accumulation of quarrels appeased by the authority of Agramonte and prudence of king Sobrino ; but the enemy of concord and rival of peace being thus foiled and disappointed, and seeing how little fruit he had reaped from the labyrinth of confusion in which he had involved them, determined to try his hand once more, and revive discord and disturbance anew ; and these were the means he practised for this purpose : the troopers, apprised of the quality of those with whom they had been engaged, were fain to be quiet, and retreat from the fray, concluding that whatever might happen, they would have the worst of the battle ; but one of them, who had been pummelled and kicked by Don Fernando, recollected that among other warrants for apprehending delinquents, he had one against Don Quixote, issued by the holy brotherhood, on account of his having set the galley slaves at liberty, as Sancho had very justly feared ; this coming into his head, he was resolved to assure himself, whether or not the knight's person agreed with the description ; and pulling out of his bosom a bundle of parchment, he soon found what he sought, and beginning to spell with great deliberation (for he was by no means an expert reader) between

every word he fixed his eyes upon the knight, whose physiognomy he compared with the marks specified in the warrant, and discovered, beyond all doubt, that he was the very person described: no sooner was he thus convinced, than putting up the parchment, and holding the warrant in his left hand, he with his right seized Don Quixotè so fast by the collar, that he could scarce fetch his breath, roaring aloud, "Help, in the name of the holy brotherhood; and that you may see my demand is just, read that warrant for apprehending this highwayman."

The curate, upon perusing the warrant, found what the trooper said was true, and that the description exactly agreed with the person of Don Quixotè, who seeing himself so unworthily treated by such a ragamuffin, was incensed to the highest degree, so that every bone in his body trembled with rage; and he made shift to fasten on the trooper's throat with both hands so violently, that if his companions had not come to his assistance, he would have quitted his life before the knight had quitted his hold. The innkeeper being obliged to succour his brethren, ran immediately to their assistance; his wife seeing her husband re-engaged in the quarrel, exalted her voice anew. Maritornes and the daughter squalled in concert, imploring heaven and the by-standers for help: Sancho, perceiving what passed, "By the Lord!" cried he, "what my master says about the enchantments of this castle is certainly true; for it is impossible to live an hour in quiet within its walls!"

Don Fernando parted the knight and trooper, to their mutual satisfaction; unlocking their hands, which were fast clenched in the doublet collar of the one, and the windpipe of the other: but, for all that, they did not cease demanding their prisoner, and the assistance of the company, in binding and delivering him to their charge, agreeable to the service of the

king,

king,
behal
sitar
Quix
much
bale b
waym
the p
fallen
whose
unwo
that i
sible
vert t
knigh
troop
hood
signed
me!
all jud
is his
stricte
block
tleman
gences
which
ful ex
tax, t
broug
nor e
What
table?
fused
And,
be, w
four h
hig?"

king, and the order of the holy brotherhood, in whose behalf they repeated their demand of favour and assistance, to secure that felon, robber, and thief. Don Quixote smiled at hearing these epithets, and with much composure, replied, "Come hither, ye vile and base born race! do you call it the province of an highwayman, to loose the chains of the captive, and set the prisoner free; to succour the miserable, raise the fallen, and relieve the distressed? Ah! infamous crew! whose low and grovelling understanding renders you unworthy that heaven should reveal to you the worth that is contained in knight errantry, or make you sensible of your sin and ignorance, in neglecting to revere the very shadow much more the substance of any knight. Come hither, ye rogues in a troop, and not troopers; ye robbers licensed by the holy brotherhood; and tell me what ignorant wretch he was, who signed a warrant of caption against such a knight as me! Who did not know that we are exempted from all judicial authority, and that a knight's own sword is his law, he being privileged by his valour, and restricted only by his will and pleasure? Who was the blockhead, I say, who does not know, that no gentleman's charter contains so many rights and indulgences as adhere to a knight-errant, the very day on which he is dubbed, and devotes himself to the painful exercise of arms! What knight-errant ever paid tax, toll, custom, duty, or excise? What tailor ever brought in a bill for making his clothes? What governor ever made him pay for lodging in his castle? What king did ever neglect to seat him at his own table? What damsel ever resisted his charms, or refused to submit herself entirely to his pleasure and will? And, in fine, what knight-errant ever was, is, or will be, whose single valour is not sufficient to annihilate four hundred troopers, should they presume to oppose him?"

CHAP. XIX.

In which is concluded the notable adventure of the troopers; with an account of the surprizing ferocity of our worthy knight Don Quixote.

WHILE Don Quixote harangued in this manner, the curate was employed in persuading the troopers, that he was a man disordered in his judgment, as they might perceive both by his words and actions, and therefore they ought not to proceed any further in the affair; for even if they should apprehend him, he would soon be dismissed as a person *non compos*. To this observation, the man who had the warrant replied, "that it was not his business to judge of Don Quixote's madness, but to obey the orders of his superiors; and that if he was apprehended once, they might discharge him three hundred times over, if they would." "For all that, said the priest, you must not carry him off, at present, nor do I believe he will suffer himself to be so treated."

In short, the curate talked so effectually, and the knight himself acted such extravagances, that the troopers must have been more mad than he, if they had not plainly perceived his defect; therefore they thought proper to be satisfied, and even performed the office of mediators betwixt the barber and Sancho Panza, who still maintained the fray with great animosity; for the troopers, as limbs of justice, brought the cause to an arbitration, and decided it in such a manner, as left both parties, if not fully satisfied, at least in some sort content with the determination, which was, that the pannels should be exchanged, but the girths and halters remain as they were. With regard to Mambrino's helmet, the curate, unperceived by Don Quixote, took the barber aside and paid him eight rials for the bason, taking a receipt in full, that

cleared

cleared the knight from any suspicion of fraud, from thenceforward, for ever, amen.

These two quarrels, which were of the greatest importance of any that happened, being luckily composed, it remained that three of the servants belonging to Don Lewis should return, and the fourth accompany his master to the place whither Don Fernando intended to conduct him; and as good luck and favourable fortune had already begun to quell the spirit of discord, and smooth all difficulties, in behalf of the lovers and heroes in the inn, they were resolved to proceed in such a laudable work, and bring every thing to a happy conclusion; for the domestics were satisfied with what Don Lewis proposed; a circumstance that gave such pleasure to Donna Clara, that every body who beheld her face might have discerned the joy of her soul. Zorayda, though she did not well understand the incidents she had seen, was sorrowful and gay, by turns, according as she perceived the company affected, particularly her Spaniard, upon whom her eyes and heart were always fixed. The innkeeper, who took particular notice of the full satisfaction which the barber had received from the curate, demanded payment of Don Quixote of the reckoning, as well as for the damage he had done to the bags, and the loss of his wine, swearing that neither Rozinante nor Sancho's ass should stir from the stable, until he should be satisfied to the last farthing*." The curate pacified the landlord, and Don Fernando paid the bill, although the judge very frankly offered to take that upon himself: in this manner, universal concord was restored; so that the inn no longer represented the disorder in Agramonte's camp, but rather the peace and quiet

* It were to be wished, for the honour of Spanish innkeepers, that Cervantes had caused mine host to restore Sancho's wallet, which he had detained on the day of the blanketing; as such restitution would have increased the general satisfaction.

that reigned in the time of Octavius Cæsar : and this blessing was generally ascribed to the laudable intention and great eloquence of the priest, together with the incomparable generosity of Don Fernando.

Don Quixote now finding himself freed and disentangled from so many broils, in which both he and his squire had been involved, thought it high time to proceed on his journey, in order to finish that great adventure to which he had been summoned and chosen : he therefore, with determined purpose, went and fell upon his knees before Dorothea, who refusing to hear him in that posture, he rose in obedience to her will, and expressed himself in this manner : “ It is a common proverb, beauteous princess, that diligence is the mother of success ; and in many important causes, experience hath shewn, that the assiduity of the solicitor hath brought a very doubtful suit to a very fortunate issue ; but the truth of this maxim is no where more evinced than in war, where activity and dispatch anticipate the designs of the enemy, and obtain the victory, before he has time to put himself in a posture of defence. This I observe, most high and excellent princess, because, in my opinion, our stay in this castle is unprofitable and prejudicial, as we may one day perceive, when it is too late ; for who knows but by means of secret and artful spies, your enemy, the giant, may get notice that I am coming to destroy him ; and taking the opportunity of our delay, fortify himself in some impregnable castle, against which all my diligence, and the strength of my indefatigable arm, will not avail : wherefore, most noble princess, let us, as I have already observed, prevent his designs by our activity, and set out immediately, in the name of good fortune, which your highness shall not long sigh for, after I shall have come within sight of your adversary.”

Here the knight left off speaking, and with great
com.

composure, expected the answer of the beautiful infanta, who, with a most princely air, and in a stile perfectly well suited to his address, replied in this manner: "I thank you, sir knight, for the desire you express to assist me in my necessity, like a true knight, whose duty and province it is to succour the fatherless and distressed; and Heaven grant that your desire and my expectation may be fulfilled, that you may see there are grateful women upon earth. With regard to my departure, let it be as speedy as you please: my will is altogether included in yours; dispose of me, therefore, according to your own pleasure; for she who hath once invested you with the charge and defence of her person, and solely depends upon your valour for being re-established on her throne, would act preposterously, in seeking to contradict what your prudence shall ordain." "In the name of God, then," cried Don Quixote, "since a princess humbles herself thus before me, I will not let slip the opportunity of raising her up, and placing her upon the throne of her ancestors: let us depart immediately; for the desire of seeing you restored, the length of the journey, and the common reflection, 'that delays are dangerous,' act as spurs upon my resolution; and since heaven hath not created, nor hell ever seen an object that could strike me with ~~terror and~~ consternation; go, Sancho, saddle Rozinante, prepare the queen's palfrey, and get ready your own ass, while we take leave of the constable, and these noble personages, and set forward on our journey without loss of time."

Here Sancho, who was present all the time, shook his head, saying, "Ah, master, master! there are more tricks in town than you dream of; with submission to the honourable lappets be it spoken." "What tricks can there be either in town or city, that can redound to my discredit, rascal?" cried the knight.

knight. "Nay, if your worship be in a passion," replied the squire, "I will keep my tongue within my teeth, and not mention a syllable of what, as a trusty squire and faithful servant, I am bound to reveal to my master." "Say what thou wouldst," answered Don Quixote, "so thy words have no tendency to make me afraid; for in being susceptible of fear, thou shewest the baseness of thy own character, as I, in being proof against all sorts of terror, preserve the dignity of mine." "As I am a sinner to God," cried Sancho, "that is not the case, but this I know for truth and positive certainty, that this lady, who calls herself queen of the great kingdom of Micomicon, is no more a queen than my mother; for if she were what she pretends to be, she would not be nuzzling into a corner with one of this company, at every snatch of an opportunity."

Dorothea's face was overspread with a blush, at these words of Sancho; for, sooth to say, her husband Don Fernando had several times, as he thought unperceived, made free with her lips, as earnest of that reward his affection deserved; and in so doing, he was observed by Sancho, who thought that such condescension in her looked more like the behaviour of a courtesan than that of such a mighty princess; so that she neither could nor would answer one word to this charge, but suffered him to proceed in these words: "This, dear master, I make bold to mention, because if after we have travelled, the Lord knows how far, and passed many weary days and bitter nights, he that is taking his recreation in this inn should gather the fruit of all our labour; we need not be in such a perilous hurry to saddle Rozinante, prepare the palfrey, and get ready the ass; but had better remain in peace where we are, and as the saying is, "While we enjoy our meal, let every harlot mind her spinning wheel."

Gracious Heaven! what a torrent of indignation entered

entered
these in
was th
with a
his eyes
inconfi
soul mo
dere! o
nourabl
such di
imagina
deposits
very, in
that re
sume to
sure!"
his che
flampee
the wr
Sancho
and fu
the ear
swallow
the flea
ther; b
quaint
peace h
of the
blinded
uttered
reason
standin
pected
person
family
for kni
of each

entered the breast of Don Quixote, when he heard these indecent expressions of his squire: such, I say, was the rage that took possession of his faculties, that with a faltering voice and stammering tongue, while his eyes flashed lightning, he exclaimed, "O villainous, inconsiderate, indecent, and ignorant peasant! thou foul mouthed, unmannerly, insolent and malicious slanderer! darest thou utter such language against these honourable ladies in my presence? darest thou entertain such disgraceful and audacious ideas in thy confused imagination? Get out of my sight, monster of nature, depository of lies, cupboard of deceit, granary of knavery, inventor of mischief, publisher of folly, and foe to that respect which is due to royalty; go, nor presume to see my face again, on pain of my highest displeasure!" So saying, he pulled up his eyebrows, distended his cheeks, looked round him, and with his right foot stamped violently upon the floor, in consequence of the wrath that preyed upon his entrails.

Sancho was so shrunk and terrified at these words and furious gestures, that he would have been glad if the earth had opened that instant under his feet and swallowed him up; and not knowing what else to do, he sneaked off from the presence of his incensed master; but the discreet Dorothea, who was so well acquainted with Don Quixote's humour, in order to appease his indignation, accosted him thus; "Sir knight of the Rueful Countenance, let not your wrath be kindled by the nonsense which your good squire hath uttered; for perhaps, he might have had some sort of reason for what he said; and as from his good understanding and Christian conscience, he cannot be suspected of a design to bear false witness against any person whatever, it is to be supposed, and indeed I firmly believe, that every thing in this castle, as you, Sir knight, have observed, being conducted by means of enchantment, Sancho, through that diabolical medium,

dium, must have seen what he affirms, so much to the prejudice of my honour and reputation." "I swear by Almighty God!" cried Don Quixote, "that your highness hath hit upon the true cause, and the eyes of that poor sinner Sancho have been fascinated by some delusive vision of what could not possibly be real; for unless he had been misled by enchantment, such is the innocence and simplicity of that miserable wretch, that I know he neither could nor would invent a slander against any living soul." "That certainly is, and shall be the case," said Don Fernando; "for which reason, signor Don Quixote ought to pardon and restore him to the bosom of his favour, *sicut erat in principio*, before those illusions impaired his understanding."

The knight promised to forgive him accordingly; upon which the curate went in quest of Sancho, who came in with great humility, and falling on his knees, begged leave to kiss his master's hand; this favour was granted by Don Quixote, who also gave him his benediction, saying, "Thou wilt now, son Sancho, be convinced of the truth of what I have so often told thee, that all things in this castle are performed by the power of enchantment." "I believe so too," replied the squire, "except in the affair of the blanketing, which really happened in the ordinary course of things." "Thou must not imagine any such thing," answered the knight; "for had that been the case, I should have revenged thy cause at the time, and even now would do thee justice; but neither at that time nor now, could I, or can I find any persons to chastise the cause of thy disaster."

The company being desirous of knowing the affair of the blanket, the landlord gave a very minute detail of Sancho's capering, to the no small diversion of all present, except the squire himself, who would have been very much out of countenance, had not the knight assured him anew, that the whole was effected

by enchantment: though the folly of Sancho never rose to such a pitch, but that he firmly believed, without the least mixture of doubt or delusion, that his blanketing had been performed by persons of flesh and blood, and not by phantoms or imaginary beings, according to the opinion and affirmation of his master.

Two days had this illustrious company already passed at the inn, from whence thinking it now high time to depart, they concerted matters in such a manner as that, without putting Dorothea and Don Fernando to the trouble of returning with Don Quixote to the place of his habitation, in order to carry on the scheme concerning the restoration of queen Micomicona, the curate and barber were enabled to execute their design of carrying him to his own house, where endeavours might be used for the cure of his disorder. In consequence of this plan, they agreed with the master of an ox waggon, who chanced to pass that way, for transporting the knight in the following manner: having made a sort of wooden cage, capacious enough to hold Don Quixote at his ease, Don Fernando, with his companions, the servants of Don Lewis, together with the troopers and innkeeper, by order and direction of the curate, covered their faces, and disguised themselves, some in one shape, some in another, so as to appear, in Don Quixote's eyes, quite different from the people he had seen in the castle. Thus equipped, they entered, with all imaginable silence, into the chamber where he lay asleep and fatigued with the toil he had undergone in the skirmishes already described; and having fast hold on him, while he securely enjoyed his ease, without dreaming of such an accident, tied both his hands and feet so effectually, that when he waked in surprize, he could neither move, nor do any other thing but testify his wonder and perplexity at the sight of such strange faces. He then had recourse

to what his distempered imagination continually suggested, and concluded that all these figures were phantoms of that enchanted castle; and that he himself was, without all question, under the power of incantation, seeing he could not even stir in his own defence; and this conceit was exactly foreseen by the curate, who was author of the whole contrivance. The only person of the whole company who remained unaltered both in figure and intellect was Sancho, who, though his lack of understanding fell very short of his master's infirmity, was not so mad but that he knew every one of the apparitions, though he durst not open his mouth, until he should see the meaning of this assault and capture of the knight, who likewise expected, in silence, the issue of his own misfortune.

Having brought the cage into his apartment, they inclosed him in it, and fixed the bars so fast, that it was impossible to pull them asunder; then taking it on their shoulders, in carrying it out, they were saluted by as dreadful a voice as could be assumed by the barber (I do not mean the owner of the pannel) who pronounced these words: "O Knight of the Rueful Countenance! afflict not thyself on account of thy present confinement, which is necessary towards the more speedy accomplishment of that great adventure in which thy valour hath engaged thee; and which will be atchieved when the furious Manchegan lion is coupled with the white Tobosian dove, their lofty necks being humbled to the soft matrimonial yoke. From which unheard of conjunction the world shall be blessed with courageous whelps, who will imitate the tearing talons of their valiant sire; and this will happen ere the pursuer of the fugitive nymph shall have twice performed his visit through the resplendent constellations, in his natural and rapid course. And O! thou the most noble and obedient squire that ever wore sword in belt, beard on chin, or smell in nostril, be not

not d
knigh
if it
be fo
know
fruit
made
of the
fully
the f
for it
the e
to dec
farew
wards
the bi
faint
to the
heard.

Do
proph
than
promi
the ju
Dulci
would
would
persua
voice,
whose
favour
besee
fairs,
finem
accom

* A
Menta

not dismayed nor discontented at seeing the flower of knight-errantry thus carried off before thine eyes; for if it please the Creator of this world, soon shalt thou be so exalted and sublimed, as that thou wilt not even know thyself; neither shalt thou be defrauded of the fruit of those promises which thy worthy lord has made in thy behalf; and I assure thee; in the name of the sage Fibberiana *, that thy salary shall be faithfully paid, as in effect thou wilt see: follow, therefore, the footsteps of the valiant and enchanted knight; for it is necessary that you should proceed together to the end of your career; and as I am not permitted to declare myself more explicitly, I bid you heartily farewell, and will return I well know whether." Towards the end of this prophecy, he raised his voice to the highest pitch, and then sunk it gradually to such a faint and distant tone, that even those who were privy to the joke, were tempted to believe what they had heard.

Don Quixote remained very much comforted by this prophecy, the meaning of which he no sooner heard than comprehended; interpreting the whole into a promise, that he should one day see himself joined in the just and holy bonds of matrimony with his beloved Dulcinea del Toboso, from whose fortunate womb would proceed those whelps (meaning his sons) which would perpetuate the glory of la Mancha. In this persuasion, therefore, and firm belief, he raised his voice, and heaving a profound sigh, replied, "O thou! whosoever thou art, whose prognostication sounds so favourably in mine ears, I beg thou wilt, in my name, beseech the sage enchanter who takes charge of my affairs, that he will not leave me to perish in the confinement which I now suffer, until I shall have seen the accomplishment of those joyful and incomparable pro-

* A word of equal signification with Mentironiana, from Mantaroso, a liar.

mises which thou hast uttered in my behalf. So shall I glory in the hardships of this prison, and bear with pleasure these chains with which my limbs are fettered; and instead of comparing the boards on which I lie, to the rough uncomfortable field of battle, consider them as the soothing down of the most happy and luxurious marriage bed. With respect to the consolation of Sancho Panza, my squire, I confide in his virtue and affection, which will not allow him to forsake me either in prosperity or adversity; for should his evil fortune, or my unhappy fate, hinder me from bestowing upon him the island, or some equivalent according to my promise: at least, he shall not lose his wages specified and bequeathed to him in my will that is already made, a recompence which, though proportioned to my own slender ability, comes far short of his great and faithful services."

Here the squire bowed in the most respectful manner, and kissed both his hands, as he could not make his compliments to one of them apart, they being fast bound together. Then the apparitions taking the cage upon their shoulders, carried it to the waggon, in which it was immediately fixed.

CHAP. XX.

An account of the strange manner in which Don Quixote was enchanted, with other remarkable events.

DON Quixote seeing himself thus encaged, and placed upon a cart, could not help saying, "Many very grave histories have I read, concerning knights-errant; but never did I read, see, or hear, that enchanted knights were transported in this manner, at such a pace as these lazy, slow-footed animals seem to promise; for they used always to be carried through the air with surprising swiftness, wrapt up in
some

some
moun
befor
in be
But
age
sued
of th
ten
newl
meth
Wha
know
"be
erran
to a
who
tholi
they
fume
to p
tuati
truth
them
bodie
thing
Sanc
same
with
wide
all o
bad f

* In
for an
I
desir
ly ob

some dark and dusky cloud, or in a fiery chariot, or, mounted on a hypogriff, or some such creature: so that, before God! I am utterly confounded at my own fate, in being thus transported on a waggon drawn by oxen. But perhaps, the chivalry and enchantments of this age follow a different path from that which was pursued of old; and as I am a new knight on the face of the earth, and the first who revived the long-forgotten order of errantry, perhaps they may have also newly invented other kinds of incantation, and other methods of conveying those whom they enchant. What is thy opinion of the matter, son Sancho?" "I know not what my opinion is," replied the squire, "because I am not so well read in the scriptures of errantry as your worship: but for all that I will venture to affirm, ay, and swear to it, that these apparitions who stroll about us, are not altogether catholic." "Catholic! my * stars!" answered the knight, "how can they be catholic, when they are all devils who have assumed fantastical shapes, and come hither on purpose to perform this deed, and leave me in my present situation? But that thou mayest be ‡ convinced of the truth of what I alledge, endeavour to touch and feel them, and thou wilt perceive that they have no other bodies but forms of condensed air, consisting of nothing but mere semblance." "'Fore God! sir," cried Sancho, "I have made that trial already, and that same devil who goes about so busy, is well provided with good substantial flesh, and has another property widely different from what is reported of evil spirits, all of whom, they say, stink of brimstone and other bad smells; whereas he is so well scented with amber,

* In the original, *mi padre!* my father! which I have changed for an exclamation more frequently used in our language.

‡ In the text the knight is guilty of a palpable solecism, in desiring Sancho to touch and feel that which he himself expressly observes was subject neither to touch or feeling.

that you may perceive it at the distance of half a league." Sancho made this remark on Don Fernando, who being a man of fashion, probably wore scented linen. "Marvel not at that circumstance, friend Sancho," replied the knight; "for thou must know that devils are a set of very sagacious beings, and although they bring smells along with them, they themselves being spirits, can produce no smell; or if any odour proceeds from them, it cannot be agreeable, but rather stinking and unwholesome, because they carry their hell about them wheresoever they are, and their torments admit of no kind of alleviation: now sweet smells, being agreeable and delicious, cannot possibly proceed from beings which are productive of nought but evil; therefore if, in thy opinion, that devil smells of amber, either thy senses are perverted, or he wants to impose upon thy understanding, by making thee believe that he is not an inhabitant of hell."

Don Fernando and Cardenio overhearing this dialogue between the master and the squire, were afraid of Sancho's stumbling upon the discovery of their whole plot, in which he seemed already to have made great progress: therefore determined to hasten their departure, and calling the landlord aside, ordered him to saddle Rozinante, and put the pannel on Sancho's ass. This task he performed with great dispatch, while the curate agreed to give the troopers so much a day for attending Don Quixote to the town where he lived. Cardenio having fastened the target to one side of the pommel of Rozinante's saddle, and the basin to the other, made signs for Sancho to mount his ass, and lead his master's steed by the bridle, and then stationed two of the troopers, with their carabines, on each side of the waggon. But before it began to move, the landlady, her daughter, and Maritornes, came out to take leave of Don Quixote, feigning themselves extremely affected with his misfortune; upon which he

said,

said to
alters
and
not
thing
putat
bered
with
many
perfec
virtue
of all
Zoro
shine
heave
you
willin
foul
in wh
for i
from
my
grati
W
ladie
leave
tain
ally
othe
lette
ly v
knig
pro
prom
ever
fatis
of Z

said to them, "Weep not, worthy ladies; all these disasters are incident to those who choose my profession; and if I were not subject to such calamities, I should not deem myself a renowned knight-errant: for these things never happen to knights of little fame and reputation, who are never regarded, scarce even remembered on the face of the earth. It is quite otherwise with the valiant, whose virtue and valour is envied by many princes and rivals, who endeavour by the most perfidious means to destroy them; but nevertheless, virtue is so powerful, that of herself she will, in spite of all the necromancy possessed by the first inventor Zoroaster, come off conqueror in every severe trial, and shine refulgent in the world, as the sun shines in the heavens. Pardon me, beauteous ladies, if I have given you any disgust, through neglect or omission; for willingly and knowingly, I never offended a living soul; and pray to God to deliver me from this prison in which I am confined by some malicious enchanter: for if I regain my liberty, the favours I have received from your courtesy in this castle, shall never escape my remembrance, but always beacknowledged with gratitude, service, and respect."

While the knight made these professions to the ladies of the castle, the curate and barber took their leave of Don Fernando and his companions the captain and his brother, and all the happy ladies, especially Dorothea and Lucinda: they embraced each other, and agreed to maintain a correspondence by letters, Don Fernando giving the curate a direction by which he might write to him an account of the knight's future behaviour and fate, than which, he judged, nothing could yield him more pleasure: and promising, for his own part, to inform the priest of every thing which he thought would conduce to his satisfaction, relating to his own marriage, the baptism of Zorayda, the success of Don Lewis, and the return
of

of Lucinda to her father's house : the priest having assured him that he would obey his commands with the utmost punctuality, they embraced again, and repeated their mutual proffers of service. The innkeeper coming to the curate, put into his hand a bundle of papers, which he said he had found in the lining of the portmanteau, along with the novel of the Impertinent Curiosity ; and since the owner had not returned that way, he desired the priest to except of them ; for as he himself could not read, he had no occasion for such useless furniture : the curate thanked him for his present, which he immediately opened, and found written in the title page, *Rinconete and Cortadilla* *, a novel : from hence he concluded that, since the Impertinent Curiosity was an entertaining story, this might also have some merit, as being probably a work of the same author ; and on this supposition put it carefully up, intending to peruse it with the first convenient opportunity : then he and his friend the barber mounting their beasts, with their faces still disguised, that they might not be known by Don Quixote, jogged on behind the waggon, and the order of their march was this : first of all proceeded the cart, conducted by the driver, and guarded on each side by the troopers with their carabines, as we have already observed ; then followed Sancho Panza upon his ass, leading Rozinante by the bridle ; and in the rear of all came the curate and the barber masked, and mounted on their trusty mules, with a grave and solemn air, marching no faster than the slow pace of the oxen would allow ; while the knight sat within his cage, his hands fettered and his legs outstretched, leaning against the bars with such silence and resignation, that he looked more like a statue of stone than a man of flesh and blood : in this slow and silent manner they had travelled about a couple of leagues, when they arrived in a

* Written by Cervantes himself.

valley
place
they
oxen
shoul
rising
wher
with
whic
Mr M
cordi
A
perce
who
phleg
on e
the l
less t
stran
them
tually
comp
the v
and b
and f
whit
ner ?
badg
ous r
longe
ers, t
nor, t
of hi
know
overh
tlemen
knigh

valley, which the waggoner thinking a convenient place for his purpose, proposed to the curate that they should halt to refresh themselves, and let the oxen feed; but the barber was of opinion, that they should proceed a little farther to the other side of a rising ground, which appeared at a small distance, where he knew there was another valley better stored with grass, and much more agreeable than this in which the waggoner proposed to halt. The advice of Mr Nicholas was approved, and they jogged on accordingly.

About this time the curate chancing to look back, perceived behind them, six or seven men well mounted, who soon overtook them, as they did not travel at the phlegmatic pace of the oxen, but like people who rode on ecclesiastic mules, and were desirous of spending the heat of the day at an inn that appeared within less than a league of the waggon: these expeditious strangers coming up with our slow travellers, saluted them courteously, and one among them, who was actually a canon of Toledo, and master of those who accompanied him, observing the regular procession of the waggon, troopers, Sancho, Rozinante, the curate and barber, and in particular, Don Quixote encaged and secured as he was, could not help asking why and whither they were conveying that man in such a manner? though they had already conjectured, from the badges of the troopers, that he must be some atrocious robber or delinquent, the punishment of whom belonged to the holy brotherhood. One of the troopers, to whom the question was put, answered, "Signor, the gentleman himself will tell you the meaning of his travelling in this manner; for our parts, we know nothing at all of the matter." The knight, overhearing what passed, said to the strangers. "Gentlemen, if you are skilled and conversant in matters of knight-errantry, I will communicate my misfortune; other-

otherwise there is no reason why I should fatigue myself with the relation."

By this time the curate and barber having perceived the travellers in conversation with the knight, came up in order to prevent their plot from being discovered, just as the canon had begun to answer Don Quixote in these words: "Truly, brother, I am better acquainted with books of chivalry than with the summaries of Villalpando; so that, if there be nothing else requisite, you may freely impart to me as much as you please." "A God's name, then," said Don Quixote, "if that be the case, you must know, signor cavalier, that I am enchanted in this cage, through the envy and fraud of mischievous necromancers; for virtue is always more persecuted by the wicked than beloved by the righteous: a knight-errant I am, though none of those whose names fame ever enrolled in her eternal records; but of that number, whom maugre, and in despite of Envy herself, and all the magi whom Persia ever produced, with the brachmans of India, and gymnosophists of Æthiopia, will leave their names engraved on the temple of immortality, as examples and patterns to succeeding ages, by which all knights errant may see what steps they must follow, if they wish to attain the height and honourable summit of arms."

Here the curate interposing, said, "Signor Don Quixote speaks no more than the truth; he is enchanted in that waggon, not on account of his own crimes or misdemeanours, but through the malice of those who are disgusted at virtue, and offended at valour: this, signor, is the Knight of the Rueful Countenance, whose name perhaps you have heard, and whose valiant exploits, and mighty atchievements, will be engraved on durable brass, and carved in eternal marble, in spite of the unwearied efforts of malice to cancel, and of envy to obscure them."

The

The
from th
him wh
astonis
en him
the far
who w
ing to
tlemen
taken,
Don C
that b
and de
self w
this b
suade
vers p
neithe
he is
Then
Mr C
and in
these
know
small
as th
domi
bear
for v
have
shoul
expec
Ruef
own
comr
whee
find

The canon hearing such a stile proceed, not only from the prisoner's mouth, but also from the lips of him who was free, had well nigh crossed himself with astonishment, and could not conceive what had befallen him, while his whole company were seized with the same degree of amazement : but Sancho Panza, who was near enough to hear what passed, being willing to undeceive the strangers, said to them, " Gentlemen, whether what I am going to say be ill or well taken, I must tell you the case is this : my master Don Quixote is no more enchanted than the mother that bore me ; he enjoys his right wits, eats, drinks, and does his occasions, like other men, and as he himself was wont to do before he was engaged : now, if this be the truth of the matter, how can any man persuade me that he is enchanted ? since I have heard divers persons observe, that those who are enchanted neither eat, sleep, nor speak ; whereas my master, if he is not hindered, will talk like thirty barristers." Then turning to the curate, he proceeded thus : " Ah, Mr Curate, Mr Curate ; you think I don't know you, and imagine that I cannot dive into the meaning of these new enchantments ; but you are mistaken : I know you very well, for all your masking ; and can smell out your plots, disguise them as you will : in short, as the saying is, Just are virtue's fears, where envy domineers ; and Bounty will not stay, where niggards bear the sway. Damn the devil, if it had not been for your reverence, my master by this time would have been married to the princess Micomicona, and I should have been an earl, at least ; for less I could not expect, either from the generosity of my lord of the Rueful Countenance, or from the greatness of my own services : but now I see the truth of what is commonly said, that fortune turns faster than a mill-wheel ; and that those who were yesterday at top may find themselves at bottom to-day, It grieves me on account

count of my poor wife and children; who, instead of seeing their father come home in the post of governor or viceroy of some island or kingdom, as they had great reason to expect, will behold him returning in the station of a common groom: all this I have observed, Mr Curate, for no other reason but to prevail upon your fathership to make a conscience of the ill treatment my master receives at your hands; and consider that God may call you to account in the next world for this captivity of my lord Don Quixote, and for all the succours and benefits that are prevented by his being thus confined."

"Snuff me these candles (cried the barber, hearing the squire's declaration) why, sure, Sancho, you belong to your master's fraternity; by the Lord! I find you ought to keep him company in his cage, and undergo the same sort of enchantment, so much are you infected with the humour of his chivalry: in an unhappy moment were you got with child by his promises, and in an evil hour did that island you harp so much upon take possession of your skull." "I am not with child by any person whatever," answered Sancho; "nor will I suffer any king in Christendom to beget a child upon my body; for though I be a poor man, I'm an old Christian, and owe no man a farthing: if I long for an island, others long for things that are worse, every one being the son of his own works: the lowest mortal may come to be pope, much more governor of an island, especially as my master may gain more than he knows well what to do with. Mr Barber, you had better think before you speak: there is something else to do than shaving of heads; and one * *Pedio* may differ from another: this I say, because we know one another; and you must not think to palm false dice upon me: with re-

* Equivalent to our saying, "Every jack is not a good fellow."

gard

gard
the tr
the
what
Sancho
curate
being
to rid
sing to
other
the c
ing a
to co
madn
ly rec
with
secur
migh
your

Th
at he
being
rate,
valry
thoug
curio
that
myself
last p
the fa
indee
that
which
for m
tion;
is to
tho g
Vo

gard to the enchantment of my master, God knows the truth, and there let it lie; for, as the saying is, the more you stir it, the more it will—you know what.” The barber durst not make any reply, lest Sancho’s simplicity should discover what he and the curate were so desirous of concealing; and the priest being under the same apprehension, desired the canon to ride on with him a little before the waggon, promising to disclose the mystery of the encaged knight, with other particulars that would yield him some diversion: the canon put on accordingly, with his servants listening attentively to every thing the curate was pleased to communicate, concerning the rank, employment, madness, and manners of Don Quixote; for he briefly recounted the cause and beginning of his disorder, with the whole progress of his adventures until he was secured in the cage by their contrivance, that they might carry him home to his own house, and endeavour to find some cure for his distemper.

The canon and his servants were astonished anew, at hearing the strange story of Don Quixote, which being finished, the Toledan replied, “Truly, Mr Curate, I am firmly persuaded that those books of chivalry are very prejudicial in the commonwealth; for though I have been induced by a false taste and idle curiosity, to read the beginning of almost every one that hath been printed, I never could prevail upon myself to read any one of them from the first to the last page; because, in my opinion, they are all of the same stamp, without any essential difference; and indeed that kind of composition seems to fall under that species of writing called the Milesian fables, which are no other than extravagant tales calculated for mere amusement, without any tendency to instruction; on the contrary, the scope of your apologues is to convey instruction and delight together. Now, though the principal intention of those books is to,

VOL. II. Z delight

delight and entertain the reader, I do not see how they can answer that end, being, as they are, stuffed with such improbable nonsense: for the pleasure that the soul conceives, is from the beauty and harmony of those things which are contemplated by the view, or suggested by the imagination; so that we can receive no pleasure from objects that are unnatural and deformed. And what beauty, symmetry or proportion can be observed in a book containing the history of a youth of seventeen, who, with one back-stroke, cuts through the middle a giant like a tower, with as much ease as if he had been made of paste; and in the description of a battle, after having observed, that there are no less than a million of combatants on the side opposite to that which the hero of the piece espouses, we must, in despite of common sense, believe, that such a knight obtained the victory by the single valour of his invincible arm. Then, how shall we account for the confidence with which some queen, empress, or orphan heiress, throws herself into the protection of an unknown knight errant? What mind, if not wholly barbarous and uncultivated, can be pleased with an account of a huge tower full of knights sailing upon the sea, like a ship before the wind; being over-night upon the coast of Lombardy, and next morning arrived in the dominions of Prester John, in the Indies, or in some other country which Ptolemy never discovered, nor Marcus Polus ever saw? If to this observation, it be answered, that the authors of those books do not pretend that the stories they contain are true; and therefore they are under no necessity of adhering to such niceties of composition: I reply, that fiction is always the better the nearer it resembles truth; and agreeable, in proportion to the probability it bears, and the doubtful credit which it inspires. Wherefore, all such fables ought to be suited to the understanding of those who read them,

and

and written so, as that by softening impossibilities, smoothing what is rough, and keeping the mind in suspense, they may surprize, agreeably perplex and entertain, creating equal admiration and delight; and these never can be excited by authors who forsake probability and imitation, in which the perfection of writing consists. I have never as yet seen, in any book of chivalry, an entire body of a fable, with all its members so proportioned as that the middle corresponds with the beginning, and the end is suitable to both: on the contrary, one would think the author's intention is commonly to form a chimera or monster, instead of a figure well proportioned in all its parts. Besides, their stile is usually harsh, their achievements incredible, their amours lascivious, their courtesy impertinent, their battles tedious, their dialogue insipid, their voyages extravagant, and in short, the whole void of all ingenuity of invention; so that they deserve to be banished as useless members from every Christian commonwealth."

The curate, who had listened with great attention, hearing the canon talk so sensibly, looked upon him as a man of excellent understanding, and assented to every thing he said. observing that, in consequence of his being of the same opinion, and of the grudge he bore to such books of chivalry, he had burned a great number of those that belonged to Don Quixote. He then gave him a detail of the scrutiny which had been made, distinguishing such as he spared from those that he condemned to the flames.

The traveller laughed heartily at this account of such an extraordinary trial, saying, that notwithstanding what he had advanced to the disadvantage of such books, there was one thing in them which he could not but approve; namely the subject they presented for a good genius to display itself, opening a large and ample field, in which the pen might at leisure expa-

state in the description of shipwrecks, tempests, battles, and encounters; painting a valiant general with all his necessary accomplishments, sage and penetrating into the enemy's designs: eloquent and effectual, either in persuading or dissuading his soldiers, ripe in council, prompt in execution, and equally brave in standing or in giving an assault. One while, recounting a piteous, tragical story; at another time, describing a joyful and unexpected event; here a most beautiful lady endued with virtue, discretion, and reserve; there, a Christian knight possessed of courtesy and valour; in the third place, an outrageous boasting barbarian; and in a fourth, a polite, considerate, gallant prince: not forgetting to describe the faith and loyalty of vassals, together with the grandeur and generosity of great men. The author may also shew himself an astrologer, geographer, musician, and well skilled in state affairs; nay, if he be so minded, he will sometimes have an opportunity of manifesting his skill in necromancy and magic: he may represent the cunning of Ulysses, the piety of Æneas, the valour of Achilles, the misfortunes of Hector, the perfidy of Sinon, the friendship of Euryalus, the liberality of Alexander, the ability of Cæsar, the clemency and candour of Trajan, the fidelity of Zopyrus, the wisdom of Cato, and finally, all those qualifications which constitute the perfection of an illustrious hero; sometimes uniting them in one, sometimes dividing them into several characters: and the whole being expressed in an agreeable stile and ingenious invention, that borders as near as possible upon truth, will, doubtless, produce a web of such various and beautiful texture, as when finished, to display that perfection which will attain the chief end and scope of such writings, which, as I have already observed, is to convey instruction mingled with delight. Besides, the unlimited composition of such books gives the author opportunities of shewing

his

his ta
all th
able
writte

In wh
an

"M
obser
thors
pofec
fense
cond
moun
poet
cano
valry
now
than
in or
ed, l
man
of r
also
gant
agre
have
thou
clud
than
ter l
ed a
exp
rega

his talents in epics, lyrics, tragedy and comedy, and all the different branches of the delicious and agreeable arts of poetry and rhetoric: for epics may be written in prose as well as verse."

CHAP. XXI.

In which the canon prosecutes the subject of knight-errantry, and makes other observations worthy of his genius.

"MR Canon," said the curate, "what you have observed is extremely just; and therefore those authors deserve the greater reprehension who have composed such books, without the least regard to good sense or the rules of art, by which they might have conducted their plans, and rendered themselves as famous in prose as the two princes of Greek and Latin poetry are now in verse." "I myself," replied the canon, "have been tempted to write a book of chivalry, observing all the maxims and precautions I have now laid down: nay, to tell you the truth, no less than an hundred sheets of it are already written; and in order to try if my own opinion of it was well founded, I have communicated my performance to a great many people, who are passionately fond of that kind of reading; not only men of learning and taste, but also ignorant persons, who chiefly delight in extravagant adventures; and I have been favoured with the agreeable approbation of them all; nevertheless, I have not proceeded in the work; because I not only thought it foreign to my profession, but likewise concluded, that the world abounds much more with fools than people of sense; and though an author had better be applauded by the few that are wise, than laughed at by the many that are foolish, I was unwilling to expose myself to the uninformed judgment of the arrogant vulgar, whose province it principally is to read

books of this kind : but what contributed most to my laying aside the pen, and indeed all thoughts of bringing the work to a conclusion, was, a reflection I made upon the comedies of the present age. If, said I to myself, our modern plays, not only those which are formed on fiction, but likewise such as are founded on the truth of history, are all, or for the greatest part, universally known to be monstrous productions, without either head or tail, and yet received with pleasure by the multitude, who approve and esteem them as excellent performances, though they are far from deserving that title ; and if the authors who compose, and the actors who represent them, affirm, that this and no other method is to be practis'd, because the multitude must be pleas'd ; that those which bear the marks of contrivance, and produce a fable digested according to the rules of art, serve only for entertainment to four or five people of taste, who discern the beauties of the plan, which utterly escape all the rest of the audience ; and that it is better for them to gain a comfortable livelihood by the many, than starve upon reputation with the few ; at this rate, said I, if I should finish my book, after having scorched every hair in my whiskers in poring over it, to preserve those rules and precepts already mentioned, I might fare at last, like the * sagacious butcher who sewed for nothing, and found his customers in thread. I have sometimes endeavour'd to persuade the players, that they were mistaken in their maxims ; and that they would bring more company to their house, and acquire much more reputation, by representing regular comedies, than such absurd performances ; but I always found them so obstinately bigoted to their own fancies, that no evidence or demonstration could alter their opinion in the least. I remember I once said to one of those pragmatic fel-

* A Spanish proverb, applicable to a great many modern projectors and reformers.

lows, "Don't you recollect, that, a few years ago, three tragedies were acted, composed by a celebrated poet of this kingdom; and that they raised admiration, pleasure, and surprize, in all who saw them exhibited, gentle as well as simple, ignorant as well as learned, and brought more money to the actors than thirty of the best that have since appeared?" "Doubtless," answered the player, "you mean Isabella, Philis, and Alexandria." "The very same," said I: "and pray take notice whether or not they are composed according to rule, or failed to please every body, because they were regular? Wherefore, the fault does not lie in the multitude's demanding absurdities, but in those who can represent nothing else; for there is nothing absurd in the play of Ingratitude Revenged, nor in Numantia, the Merchant Lover, the Favourable Female Foe, nor in some others which were composed by poets of genius, to their own reputation, and the advantage of those who represented them. I made use of many more arguments, by which he seemed to be confuted, though not so much satisfied or convinced, as to retract his erroneous opinions."

"Mr Canon," said the curate, interrupting him in this place, "the subject you have touched upon awakes in me an old grudge I have bore to our modern plays, even equal to that I entertain against books of chivalry. Comedy, according to Tully, ought to be the mirror of life, the exemplar of manners, and picture of truth; whereas those that are repreiented in this age are mirrors of absurdity, exemplars of folly, and pictures of lewdness: for sure nothing can be more absurd in a dramatic performance than to see the person who, in the first scene of the first act, was produced a child in swaddling-clothes, appear a full grown man with a beard in the second; or to represent an old man active and valiant, a young soldier cowardly, a footman eloquent, a page a counsellor, a king

a king a porter, and a princeſs a ſcullion. Then what ſhall we ſay concerning their management of the time and place in which the actions have, or may be ſuppoſed to have happened? I have ſeen a comedy, the firſt act of which was laid in Europe, the ſecond in Aſia, and the third was finiſhed in Africa; nay, had there been a fourth, the ſcene would have ſhifted to America; ſo that the fable would have travelled through all the four diviſions of the globe. If imitation be the chief aim of comedy, how can any ordinary underſtanding be ſatiſfied with ſeeing an action that paſſed in the time of King Pepin and Charlemagne, aſcribed to the emperor Heraclius, who, being the principal perſonage, is repreſented, like Godfrey of Bullogne, carrying the croſs into Jeruſalem, and making himſelf maſter of the holy ſepulchre; an infinite number of years having paſſed between the one and the other. Or, when a comedy is founded upon fiction, to ſee ſcraps of real hiſtory introduced, and facts miſrepreſented both with regard to perſons and times; not with any ingenuity of contrivance, but with the moſt manifeſt and inexcusable errors and ſtupidity: and what is worſt of all, there is a ſet of ignorant pretenders, who call this the perfection of writing; and that every attempt to ſucceed by a contrary method is no other than a wild gooſe chaſe *. Again, if we conſider thoſe plays that are written on divine ſubjects, how many falſe miracles do they contain? how many apocryphal events miſunderſtood by the author, who frequently confounds the operations of one ſaint with thoſe of another? nay, in profane ſubjects, they have the aſſurance to work miracles, for no other reſpect or conſideration, but becauſe they think ſuch a miracle will make a very decent appearance in ſuch a place; and, as they term it, attract the admiration of the vulgar, and bring them in crowds to the play;

Euſca Gulfirias, ſignifies to ſeek dainties.

but

but all this redounds to the prejudice of truth, the contempt of history, and scandal of our Spanish wits; so that the authors of other nations, who punctually observe the unities of the drama, conclude, that we are barbarous and ignorant, from our absurd and preposterous productions. Neither is it a sufficient excuse to say, that the intent of all well governed commonwealths, in permitting public plays to be acted, is to entertain the common people with some honest recreation, in order to divert those bad humours which idleness usually engenders; and that, since this end is answered by any play whatever, either good or bad, there is no occasion to cramp and limit the authors or actors to the just laws of composition; the purpose of the legislator being, as I have said, accomplished without any such restriction. To this suggestion I answer, that the same end, without any sort of comparison, will be much better answered by good than bad comedies; for after having seen an artful and well-digested play represented, the hearer will go away, delighted with the comic parts, instructed by the serious, and agreeably surprized with the incidents; collecting information from the dialogue, precaution from the deceits of the fable, experience from the examples exhibited, affection for virtue, and indignation for vice. All these sensations, I say, will a good comedy excite in the spectator's mind, let it be never so stupid and uncultivated: for of all impossibilities, it is the most impossible, that a comedy, thus perfect in all its parts, should not yield more entertainment, satisfaction, and delight, than one that is defective in each particular, as the greatest part of our modern pieces are. Neither is this want of correctness always to be laid to the author's charge; for there are some poets among us who are perfectly well acquainted with the rules of writing, and could easily avoid any such errors of composition; but as their pieces are
made

made for sale, they say, and it is very true that the players would not purchase them if they were of any other stamp: so that the author is fain to accommodate himself to the demand of the actor who pays him for his work. The truth of this observation evidently appears in a great number of comedies which have been composed by a most happy genius of these * kingdoms, with so much wit, pleasantry, elegance of versification, genteel dialogue, sententious gravity, and finally with such elocution and sublimity of stile, that the whole world resounds with his fame: yet in suiting himself to the false taste of the actors, he hath not been able to bring them all to the requisite point of perfection. Others again are so inconsiderate in their productions, that after representation, the players have been frequently obliged to fly and abroad, for fear of chastisement, on account of having exhibited something to the prejudice of royal heads, or dishonour of noble families: now all these inconveniences, with many more that I do not chuse to mention, might be prevented, if there was at court some person of taste and learning, appointed to examine every dramatic performance before its appearance on the stage; and this precaution should affect not only the plays composed in Madrid, but all pieces whatever to be represented within the monarchy of Spain; for without the approbation of this licenser, signed and sealed, no magistrate should allow any production to be acted within the bounds of his jurisdiction. In consequence of this expedient, the actors would take care to submit every play to the censure of the examiner, that they might afterwards represent them with safety; and the authors would employ more caution and study in their compositions, knowing that they must pass the rigorous examination of an intelligent judge:

* Lopez de Vega Corpio.

In this manner, good comedies would be produced, and the aim of such writings happily accomplished, to the entertainment of the people, and the credit of Spanish wits; while the actors would represent them with security and advantage, and the state be exempted from the trouble of chastising such delinquents. And if the same licencer, or any other person, were invested with the charge of examining books of chivalry before they see the light, some performances of that sort would certainly appear in all the perfection you have described, enriching our language with the delightful and precious treasure of eloquence; while the old romances would be entirely eclipsed by the light of the new, that would furnish rational amusement not only for the idle, but also for those who are most industrious; seeing it is impossible for the bow to continue always bent, or that feeble nature can subsist without some innocent recreation.

Thus far had the canon and curate proceeded in their conversation, when the barber coming up to them, said to his townsman, "Mr Licentiate, this is the place in which I proposed to halt, that the oxen might have fresh pasture in abundance." The curate approved of the hint, and communicated their intention to the canon, who resolved to stay with them, being invited by the situation of a delicious valley that presented itself to his view; that he might therefore enjoy the agreeable spot, together with the conversation of the curate, for whom he had already conceived an affection, and be more particularly informed of Don Quixote's exploits, he ordered his domestics to proceed to an inn, which was not far off, and bring from thence victuals sufficient for the whole company; for he was resolved to spend the afternoon where he was. One of the servants told him that the sumpter mule, which by that time had reached the inn, carried provision enough, and that they should want nothing but barley for

for the beasts. "If that be the case," said the canon, "carry the rest to the inn, and bring the sumpter-mule hither."

Meanwhile, Sancho, perceiving that he might now speak to his master without being overheard by the curate and barber, of whom he was suspicious, approached the cage, and thus addressed himself to the knight: "Truly, Sir, in order to disburthen my conscience, I must tell you something concerning this same enchantment. These people, with masks on their faces, are no other than the curate and barber of our town, who, I verily believe, have contrived to carry you off in this manner, out of pure envy and spite, because your worship has got the heels of them in your famous atchievements: now, this being supposed, it follows, as plain as the nose upon my face, that you are not enchanted, but rather fooled and bamboozled. As a proof of which, I desire to ask you one question, which, if you answer, as I do believe you will, your worship may clap your ten fingers on the trick, and perceive that you are not enchanted, but that your whole brain is turned topsy turvy." "Ask what you will," said Sancho, replied Don Quixote, "I will freely answer, and satisfy your doubts to the best of my power: with regard to your saying, that those who attend us are our friends and townsmen the curate and barber, so indeed they may appear to your eye: but, that they are really and effectually so, you must by no means believe; on the contrary, you are to conclude that, if they resemble our friends, the enchanters, who can assume what form they please, have taken that appearance and resemblance, to mislead your credit, and bewilder your imagination in such a labyrinth of perplexity, that even the clue of Theseus would not extricate your thoughts: besides, they may have done it with a view of confounding my judgment, that I might not be able to guess from what quarter my misfortune

pro-

ceeds; for, if on one hand, you affirm, that I am attended by the barber and curate of our town; and on the other I find myself engaged; though I am sensible that nothing but supernatural force could suffice to confine me thus, what would you have me say or think, but that the manner of my enchantment exceeds every thing I have read in all the histories that treat of enchanted knights? Wherefore, set your heart at rest, and take it for granted, that these are as far from being the persons you have mentioned, as I am from being a Turk. With respect to thy desire of asking me questions, I repeat my promise of answering, even if thy interrogation should last till to-morrow morning."

"God's blessed mother!" cried the squire with great vociferation, "is it possible that your worship can be so thick-skulled and brainless, as not to perceive the truth of what I alledge, and see that this imprisonment and misfortune is more owing to malice than enchantment? But seeing it is so, I will venture to prove, beyond all contradiction, that you are no more enchanted than my ass: tell me, therefore, as God shall deliver you from this mischance, and as you hope to see yourself in the arms of my lady Dulcinea, when you least expect any such good luck—" "Truce with thy conjuration," said the knight, "and ask what thou wilt; I have already promised to answer with the utmost punctuality." "That is my request," answered Sancho; "and what I want to know is, that your worship will tell me, without eking or curtailings God's precious truth, but in honest simplicity of heart, as it ought to be, and always is told those who, like your worship, profess the occupation of arms, under the title of knights-errant—" "I tell thee," cried the knight, interrupting him, "I will not in the least prevaricate; dispatch then, Sancho, for truly I am quite tired with so many salvos, sollicitations, and preambles." "I make so bold," replied the squire, "be-

cause I am well aware of my master's goodness and sincerity, which being as it were to the purpose, I ask (with reverence be it spoken) whether or not, since you have been confined, and, as you suppose, enchanted in this cage, your worship hath felt any motion or desire to undam either way, as the saying is?" "I do not know what you mean by undaming," answered Don Quixote; "you must be more explicit, Sancho, if you expect an answer to the purpose, "Is it possible," said the squire, "that your worship should be ignorant of the meaning of the word undaming, which is the first thing the boys learn at school? Well then, you must know, I wanted to ask if you never had any inclination to do that which no body else can do for you," "Now I understand thee, Sancho," said the knight; "verily, I have had divers calls of that nature, one of which is at present very importunate: pray fall upon some method to disembarraß me: for I believe all is not so sweet and clean as it ought to be."

CHAP. XXII.

The sage conversation that passed between Sancho Panza and his master Don Quixote.

"**H**A!" cried Sancho, "have I caught you at last? This is what I wanted to know, with all my heart and soul: come on, sir, there is no denying of what is commonly said, when any person is in the dumps, I know not what is the matter with such an one; he neither eats, drinks, nor sleeps, nor answers to the purpose when he is spoke to; sure the man must be enchanted: from whence we are to conclude, that those who are enchanted neither eat, drink, sleep, nor do their natural occasions, as I have observed; but this is not the case with such as are disturbed with
the

the inclination that your worship at present feels, drinking when they can get liquor, eating when they can lay hold on food, and giving plain answers to every question that is asked." "Thou art in the right," replied Don Quixote; "but I have already told thee, that there are different kinds of enchantment; and time may have so entirely altered the fashion, that those who are under the power of enchantment in this age may, like me, retain the use of their faculties, though it was quite otherwise of old; so that there is no arguing or drawing consequences against the different practice of different times. I am sensible and certain of my being enchanted; and that is sufficient for the quiet of my conscience, which would give me great uneasiness, if I had the least doubt about my fate, and allowed myself to be in this cage, like an idle coward, deceitfully withholding my succour from a great number of the needy and oppressed, who, at this very hour, must be in the most absolute and extreme necessity, from the want of my aid and protection." "Nevertheless," answered the squire, "for your more abundant satisfaction, your worship, methinks, might try to escape from this prison; for my own part, I'll be bound not only to give my assistance, but even to work your deliverance; and then you may endeavour to remount your trusty Rozinante, who trudges along as melancholy and sad as if he was enchanted also. This being performed, let us try our fate once more in quest of adventures; and if they do not turn out to our expectation, it will be time enough to return to the cage, in which, I promise, on the faith of a true and loyal squire, to shut myself up with your worship, if perchance, through your ill fortune or my folly, this that I mention should not succeed." "I am content to follow thy counsel, brother Sancho," replied the knight, "and whenever thou shalt perceive a proper conjuncture for effecting my deliverance, I will impli-

citly obey thee in every thing ; but thou wilt soon find thyself deceived in thy opinion of my mishap."

This conversation between the knight-errant and the erring squire, lasted until they arrived at the place in which the curate, canon, and barber, who had already alighted, waited for them. The waggoner immediately unyoking his oxen, turned the ~~h~~ loose in that verdant and delicious spot, the coolness of which was extremely inviting, not only to enchanted people, like Don Quixote, but also to persons of intelligence and discretion, like his squire, who besought the curate to let his master come out of the cage for a few minutes ; because, without such permission, the prison would not be quite so clean as the decency of such a knight required. The curate, understanding what he meant, told him that he would willingly grant his request, were he not under some apprehension that his master, finding himself at liberty, would play one of his old pranks, and be gone where men should never see his face again. " I will be bound for his good behaviour," answered Sancho : " And I also," said the canon, " especially if he will promise, on the word of a knight, not to stir from our presence, until he shall have obtained our consent."

" I will (cried the knight, who overheard all that passed), the more so, as one who, like me, is enchanted, cannot be at liberty to make use of his own person ; for the enchanter can so utterly deprive him of all motion, that he shall not be able to stir from the place for three whole ages : and if he should make his escape, would whisk him back through the air in a twinkling." This being the case, he said, they might very safely unage him, especially as such indulgence would redound to the benefit of the whole company : for he protested, that if they did not comply with his present necessities, he should be obliged to incom-
mode

made their sense of smelling, unless they removed to a greater distance from the place of his confinement.

The canon, confiding in his word and honour, took him by the hands, tied as they were, and helped him to descend from his cage: then the knight, being infinitely rejoiced at his momentary deliverance, stretched every joint in his body, and going up to Rozinante, gave him a slap on the buttocks, saying, "I still hope in God and his blessed mother, thou flower and mirror of steeds! that in a short time we shall both obtain our hearts desire; thou prancing under the agreeable pressure of thy lord, and I mounted upon thy trusty back, exercising the employment for which Heaven sent me into the world." Having pronounced this apostrophe, he retired with Sancho to a remote place, from whence he returned much eased and comforted, and more desirous than ever of executing the project of his squire. The canon could not help gazing upon him, being struck with admiration at the strange unaccountable symptoms of his disorder; for, in all his conversation and replies, he gave evident proofs of an excellent understanding, and never lost himself * except on the subject of chivalry, as we have formerly observed: he was therefore touched with compassion for his infirmity, and when the whole company were seated on the grass, waiting for the return of the sumpter-mule, addressed himself to the knight in this manner:

"Is it possible, good sir, that the idle and unlucky reading of books of chivalry can have so far impaired your judgment, as that you should now believe yourself enchanted, and give credit to other illusions of the same kind, which are as far from being true, as truth is distant from falsehood? Is it possible that the human understanding can suppose that ever this world produced that infinite number of Amadis'es, with the

* Literally, Never lost the stirrups.

whole crowd of famous knights, so many emperors of Trebifond, Fleximartes of Hyrcania, palfreys, damsels, serpents, dragons, and giants ; so many incredible adventures, enchantments of different kinds, battles, dreadful encounters, magnificence of apparel, enamoured princesses, squires, created earls, witty dwarfs, billets, amorous expressions, valiant ladies, and finally such extravagant events as are contained in books of knight-errantry ? For my own part, when I read a performance of that sort, without reflecting that it is a legend of vanity and lies, my imagination is a little amused ; but as soon as I begin to consider it in the right point of view, I dash the volume against the wall, and would even commit it to the flames (if I should chance to be near a fire), as a criminal richly deserving such punishment, on account of its falsehood and imposture, so contrary to nature, and bewildered from the tract of common sense ; and as an inventor of new sects and preposterous ways of life ; misleading and inducing the ignorant vulgar to believe the absurdities which it contains : nay, so presumptuous are such productions, as to disturb the minds of gentlemen of birth and education, as may be too plainly perceived by their effects upon you, signor, whom they have reduced to such a pass, as to make it necessary that you should be cooped up in a cage, and transported from place to place on a waggon, like a lion or tyger, exhibited as a shew for money. Go to, signor Don Quixote ; have pity upon yourself, return into the bosom of discretion, and put those happy talents, which Heaven hath been pleased to bestow upon you, to a better use ; employing your genius in other studies, which may redound to the increase of your honour, as well as to the good of your soul ; or, if swayed by your natural inclination, you are still desirous of reading the histories of exploits and atchievements, you may have recourse to the book of Judges in the
holy

holy scripture ; and there you will find real miracles of might, and actions equally valiant and true. Portugal produced a Viriatus, Rome a Cæsar, Carthage an Hannibal, Greece an Alexander, Castile a count Fernan Goncales, Valencia a Cid, Andalusia a Gonzalo Fernandez, Estremadura a Diego Garcia de Paredes, Xerez a Garcia Perez de Vargas, Toledo a Garcilasso, Sevil a Don Manuel de Leon ; the history of their valiant exploits will afford entertainment, instruction, surprize and delight, to readers of the most sublime conception. Such study as this would be worthy of the good sense of Signor Don Quixote, who would thus become learned in history, enamoured of virtue, improved in worth, bettered in morals, brave without rashness, cautious without cowardice ; while the whole would redound to the honour of God, his own particular emolument, and the renown of La Mancha, from whence I understand his family and origin is derived."

Don Quixote listened with infinite attention to this harangue ; and even after he perceived it was finished, looked stedfastly at the canon for some time, before he answered in these words ; " Signor Hidalgo, if I am not mistaken, the scope of your discourse was to convince me that there never were knights-errant in this world ; that all the books of chivalry are false, deceitful, unprofitable, nay mischievous in a commonwealth ; that I have been much to blame in reading, more so in believing, and most of all in imitating the characters they describe, by following the most painful profession of knight-errantry ; and lastly, you deny that ever there was an Amadis either of Gaul or Greece, or that any one of that vast number of knights recorded in those writings had any real existence." " You have exactly summed up my allegations," said the canon. " You were likewise pleased to add," resumed the knight, " that such books had done me infinite prejudice, impaired my judgment, and reduced

reduced me to the necessity of being confined in a cage; and that I would do well to amend and alter my course of studies; and to use performances which contain more truth, instruction, and delight." "That," said the canon, "was my precise meaning." "Why then," cried Don Quixote, "in my opinion, the person impaired in his judgment, and enchanted, is no other than your worship, who have presumed to utter such blasphemies against an order so well received in the world, and established as truth, that he who like you denies it, deserves the same punishment you inflicted upon those books that gave you disgust; for to say that there never was such a person as Amadis, or any other of those adventurous knights, with whom history abounds, is like an endeavour to persuade people that frost is not cold, that the sun yields no light, and the earth no sustenance. Will any earthly eloquence make a man believe that the story of the Infanta Floripes, and Guy of Burgundy, is false; or that of Fierabras, with the bridge of Mantible, which happened in the time of Charlemagne, and I vow to God! is as true as that the sun shines at noon-day! If this be a lie, you may also affirm, that there never was such an event as the Trojan war, nor such persons as Hector and Achilles, or the twelve peers of France, or Arthur king of England, who to this day survives in the likeness of a raven, and is every moment expected to reascend his throne. People may as well venture to say, that the history of Guarino Mesquino, and the suit of St Griel, are pure fiction; and look upon the amours of Don Tristan and queen Isco, with those of Ginebra and Lancelot, as altogether apocryphal; though there are people who almost remember to have seen the duenna Quintanona, who was the best winesinker in Great Britain: this is so true, that I myself have heard my grandmother by the father's side, often say, when she happened to see a

duenna

duenna
is a p
when
her p
vener
Peter
this c
peg
valian
taken
coach
Rom
weav
justly
with
exist
they
Juan
know
city
Mon
fil w
the
of h
dit t
ved
Barl
neal
the
wife
wen
he
hou
just
pass
*
veil,

duenna with a reverend * biggen, "Grandson, there is a person very like the duenna Quintanona." From whence I conclude, that she must either have known her personally, or, at least, seen some picture of that venerable matron: then, who can deny the history of Peter of Provence, and the fair Magalona, since, to this day, may be seen, in the royal armoury, the very peg that turned the wooden horse upon which the valiant Peter travelled through the air; by the same token, that it is something larger than the pole of a coach, and stands near the saddle of Babieca: nay, at Roncesvalles, you may see Orlando's horn, as big as a weaver's beam. From all which circumstances we may justly infer, that the twelve peers, the Peters, the Cids, with all those who were called knights-errant, actually existed according to the records of their fame: otherwise, they may as well deny, that the valiant Portuguese, Juan de Merlo, was a knight errant; though it is well known, that he went to Burgundy and fought in the city of Ras with the famous lord of Charne, called Monseigneur Pierre, and afterwards in the city of Basle with Monseigneur Henrique de Remestan, gaining the victory in each of these combats, with abundance of honourable fame: neither, I suppose, will they credit the defiance and adventures that were also atchieved in Burgundy by those valiant Spaniards Pedro, Barba and Guttierre Quixada (from whom I am lineally descended on the father's side), who conquered the sons of the count de St Paul: nay, let them likewise refuse to own that Don Fernando de Guevara went in quest of adventures into Germany, where he fought with Messire George, a knight of the household to the duke of Austria; and say that the jousts and tournaments at Suero de Quinones, and the pafs, were mere illusion; as well as the enterprizes of

* Toca, which is the original word, signifies a woman's coif, veil, or handkerchief.

Monseig-

Monseigneur Lewis de Falses, against Don Goncalo de Guzman, a Castilian knight, together with many other exploits performed by Christian warriors belonging to these and other foreign realms, so authentic and true, that (I repeat my asseveration) he who denies them is void of all reason and common sense."

The canon was struck with admiration, when he heard Don Quixote utter such a medley of fiction and truth; and perceiving that he was intimately acquainted with every circumstance regarding and concerning the atchievements of knight-errantry, answered him in these words: "Signor Don Quixote, I cannot deny but what you have said is partly true, particularly that which regards the Spanish knights: I grant also that there was an order called the twelve peers of France, but cannot believe that they performed all those exploits recounted by archbishop Turpin; for the truth is, they were a set of knights chosen by the kings of France, under the title of the Twelve Peers, because they were all equal in point of virtue, rank, and valour; at least if they were not, they ought to have been possessed of this parity of qualifications; for it was an association resembling the modern orders of St Jago and Calatrava, which suppose that every member is valiant, virtuous, and noble; and as we now say a knight of St Juan or Alcantara, in those days they said a knight of the twelve peers; because those who professed that military order were equal in all respects, and twelve in number: that there were such persons as the Cid and Bernardo del Carpio, I make no question; but whether or not they performed all those exploits which are ascribed to them, is, I believe, extremely doubtful: with respect to the peg of count Peter, which you say stands by the saddle of Babieca in the royal armoury, to my shame be it spoken, I am either so ignorant or short-sighted, that although I have seen the saddle, I could

never

never observe the peg, large as you have been pleased to describe it." "But there it certainly is," replied the knight; "and what makes it the more remarkable, it is said to be kept in a case of calves leather, that it may not rust." "It may be so," said the canon; "but by my holy orders! I do not remember to have seen any such thing: yet granting it to be in that place, I am not therefore bound to believe the stories that are recounted of so many Amadis's, and such a rabble of knights; nor is it reasonable, that a person of honour, like you, endowed with so many happy talents, should give credit to such extravagant rhodomontades as are related in the lying legends of knight-errantry."

C H A P. XXIII.

Of the sage contest between Don Quixote and the canon, with other events.

"A Good jest, truly!" replied Don Quixote, "that books printed with the licence of kings, and approbation of those who are appointed to examine them, read with universal delight, celebrated by great and small, rich and poor, knights and plebeians, the learned and illiterate; finally, by persons of all ranks and degrees whatever, should contain nothing but lies; notwithstanding the appearance of truth which they maintain, in mentioning the father, mother, country, relations, condition, birth-place; and in giving an exact journal of the exploits peculiar to every individual knight: cease therefore, good sir, to vent such blasphemy, and believe, that, in this particular, I advise you to act according to the dictates of good sense: read them again, and you will see what pleasure you will reap for your pains; for what can be more entertaining than to see, as it were, before our eyes,
a vast

a vast lake of boiling pitch, through which an infinite number of serpents, snakes, and alligators, with many other kinds of fierce and terrible creatures, are continually winding and writhing along; then to hear a most dismal voice that seems to issue from the middle of this pitchy pool, pronounce, "O knight, whosoever thou art, that now standest gazing at the dreadful lake, if thou wouldst enjoy the bliss that is concealed beneath these sable waves, display the valour of thy dauntless breast, and dart thyself amidst these black and burning billows; otherwise, thou art not worthy to behold the mighty wonders deposited and contained within the seven castles of the seven nymphs that dwell below this fullen flood." Scarce hath the sound of this dismal voice ceased to vibrate on his ear, when the knight, without the least hesitation, or reflecting upon the danger he incurs, nay, without putting off his heavy armour, but recommending himself to God and his mistress, plunges at once into the burning lake; and when he neither cares nor knows what will be his fate, finds himself in the midst of a delightful plain, by which the Elysian fields are infinitely excelled: there the heaven seems more transparent, and the sun shines with new lustre; the eye is entertained with an agreeable forest of tall and leafy trees, whose verdure delights the view, while the ear is regaled with the sweet and artless notes of an infinite number of little painted warblers that hop from bough to bough: here he perceives a brook, whose refreshing waters, clear as liquid crystal, run murmuring on the yellow sand, and glistening pebbles, that emulate the purest pearls and heaps of sifted gold.

In one place springs an artificial fountain, adorned with variegated jasper and polished marble; in another rises a rustic grotto, in which the small shells of the mussel, and the white and yellow twisted domes of the snail, placed in beauteous disorder, and mixed with

bits

bits of
pose f
be ex
a sud
lace, t
mond
manfr
terials
rubies
thus f
a fair
dressed
descri
I thou
princi
who t
leading
as nak
bathes
anoint
puts u
perfum
over h
valued
all this
late, h
table i
admira
his ha
flower
attend
ing fil
dishes,
confou
his rep
from w
freshed
Vo

bits of shining crystal and counterfeit emeralds, compose such an agreeable variety, that nature seems to be excelled by imitative art. In a third place, all of a sudden appears a strong castle or magnificent palace, the walls of massy gold, the battlements of diamond, the gates of hyacinth, and finally, the workmanship so admirable, as infinitely to excel the materials, which are no less than adamant, carbuncles, rubies, pearls, emeralds, and gold. Nay, after having thus feasted his eyes, there still remains for him to see a fair bevy of damsels coming out at the castle-gate, dressed in such gay and splendid attire, that were I to describe it minutely, as it is represented in the history, I should never have done. Then, she who appears the principal, takes by the hand the undaunted knight, who threw himself into the boiling lake, and silently leading him into the rich castle or palace, strips him as naked as he was when his mother bore him, and bathes him in water of an agreeable temperature, then anoints his whole body with aromatic essences, and puts upon him a shirt of the finest lawn, all scented and perfumed; then comes another damsel, and throws over his shoulders a mantle, which, at least, is usually valued at the price of a whole city, or more. After all this ceremony, what a sight it is, when, as they relate, he is conducted into another hall, in which a table is furnished with such elegance as to excite his admiration and suspense! when they sprinkle upon his hands water distilled from amber and odoriferous flowers; when he is seated upon a chair of ivory, and attended by all those damsels, who serve him in amazing silence! when he is allured by such a variety of dishes, and so savourily cooked, that the appetite is confounded in its choice! then to hear music, during his repast, without seeing the minstrel, or knowing from whence the sound proceeds; and, after he has refreshed himself, and the table is uncovered, while he

lolls at ease upon his chair, perhaps picking his teeth, according to custom, he is surprized with the sight of another young lady, much more beautiful than any of the former, who enters the hall, and, sitting down by the knight, begins to tell him whose castle that is, and how she is enchanted within it, relating other circumstances which create wonder in him, and raise the admiration of those who read the story. I need not further expatiate on this subject, since, from what hath been said, it plainly appears, that any part whatever, of the history of any knight-errant whatever, must yield pleasure and surprize to any reader whatsoever. Believe me, therefore, good sir, and as I have already hinted, take the trouble of reading those books, and you will see what effectual antidotes they are against melancholy, and how they improve the disposition, when it is bad. For my own part, I can safely aver, that since I professed the order of knight-errantry, I have been valiant, courteous, liberal, well-bred, generous, civil, daring, good humoured, and a patient endurer of toils, captivities, and enchantment; and though I so lately found myself shut up in a cage, like a madman, I hope, by the valour of this my arm, provided Heaven shall favour, and fortune cease to oppose me in a few days to see myself sovereign of some kingdom, when I shall be enabled to demonstrate the gratitude and generosity which reside within my breast: for truly, signor, a poor man is incapable of exerting the virtue of liberality, let him possess it in ever so eminent a degree; and that gratitude which is restrained to good will alone, is like faith without works; no more than the ghost of virtue. Wherefore I wish fortune would speedily furnish me with an opportunity of making myself an emperor, that I may exercise the virtues of my heart in bestowing benefits on my friends, especially on my poor squire Sancho Panza, one of the best men in the world, whom I intend to

create

create
obtain
capaciThe
said to
wouldwhich
pected
managheard
farm tand ta
at his
noddlethe ve
as litt
ness, cworld
" that
incomgard
ability
intentthe m
and ttent o
of the
sophicthat I
shoul
big athat h
own eI wou
fed, I
shoul
have

create an earl, in consequence of a promise which he obtained from me long ago ; though I fear he wants capacity to manage his estate."

These last words being overheard by Sancho, he said to his master, " Signor Don Quixote, I wish you would take the trouble to give me that same earldom, which is as firmly promised by your worship as expected by me, and I will undertake to find ability to manage it ; or if I should find myself at a loss, I have heard it often said, that there are certain persons who farm the estates of great noblemen at so much a year, and take charge of the whole, while the owner lolls at his ease, enjoying his income, without troubling his noddle about any other affairs. Now, I would live in the very same manner, minding the cares of this world as little as possible ; but leaving off all sorts of business, enjoying my rents, like any duke, and let the world wag." " Brother Sancho," said the canon, " that is to be understood only of the spending your income ; but the lord of a great estate must have regard to the administration of justice, which requires ability, sound judgment, and principally an upright intention ; for if this be wanting in the beginning, the middle and end will always be involved in error ; and therefore Heaven usually assists the righteous intent of the simple, while it confounds the wicked aims of the cunning." " I know nothing of these philosophies," answered the squire ; " But this I know, that I wish to God I had this earldom, as soon as I should find understanding to manage it ; for I have as big a soul as my neighbours, and as much body as he that has more ; and would be as much a king in my own estate as any he that wears a head : and so being, I would do what I pleased ; and doing what I pleased, I should please myself ; and pleasing myself, I should be satisfied ; and in being satisfied, I should have nothing more to desire ; and having nothing

more to desire, there would be an end; so let the earldom come a God's name: I wish we could see it, as one blind man said to another." "These are no bad philosophies, as you call them, Sancho," said the canon, "but for all that, there is much to be said on the subject of earldoms." "I know not what more can be said," replied Don Quixote; "for my own part, I do no more than follow the example transmitted to me by the great Amadis de Gaul, who created his squire earl of the Firm Island; and therefore I may, without scruple of conscience, bestow the same honour on Sancho Panza, who is one of the best squires that ever served knight-errant.

The canon was amazed at the methodical madness of Don Quixote, manifested in his description of the knight of the lake; and in the impression which the false adventures of chivalry had made upon his imagination: neither was his wonder diminished, when he considered the folly of Sancho, who so ardently desired the possession of that island which his master had promised to give him, as the reward of his services.

By this time the canon's servants had returned from the inn with the sumpter-mule; and, instead of a table, spread a carpet on the green grass, under the shade of some trees, where the company seating themselves all round, went to dinner, that the waggoner might not lose the opportunity of such a convenient situation, as we have already observed. While they thus enjoyed themselves, their ears were struck with a sudden noise, and the sound of a bell, issuing from the midst of some briars and thickets, that surrounded the place where they sat; and immediately appeared a beautiful she-goat; her skin speckled with spots of white, black, and grey, followed by the goatherd, who, in his rustic dialect, called to her to stop and return to the fold. The fugitive goat, trembling with affright,
came

came towards the company, and there stopped, as if to implore their protection; while her keeper, seizing her by the horns, accosted her in these words, as if she had been possessed of sense and understanding: "Ah! you spotted wanton, what a rambler you have become of late; the wolves will feast upon you one day—what is the matter with you, my pretty child? yet what else can it be, but that you are a female, and consequently inconstant! a plague upon your disposition, and all those you resemble: return, return my darling; and if you are not so happy, at least you will be more secure in the fold among your companions; for if you, who ought to watch over and guide the rest, stray about in this imprudent manner, what must become of them?"

These words of the goatherd diverted those who heard them, especially the canon, who said to him, "I beseech you, brother, to pacify yourself, and be not in such a hurry to drive back your goat, which being a female, as you observe, will follow her natural disposition, in spite of all you can do to oppose it. Take this morsel, and assuage your choler with a cup of wine, and in the mean time the goat will repose herself."

So saying, he presented to him, on the point of a fork, the hind quarter of a cold rabbit, which was thankfully accepted by the goatherd, who having taken a long draught, and composed himself, said to the company, "Gentlemen, you must not take me for a simpleton, because I talk to this animal as if it were a rational creature; for really there is a mystery concealed beneath the words I have uttered. I am a peasant, 'tis true; yet not so rustic, but that I know how to converse with men as well as beasts." "I firmly believe what you say," replied the curate; "for I myself have experienced that the mountains produce learned men, and that philosophers are to be found within

the shepherd's cot." "At least," resumed the goat-herd, "the cottage may contain those who are warned by woeful experience; and to convince you feelingly, that what I alledge is true, I, though undesired, and self-invited, saving the good pleasure of this good company, intreat a moment's hearing, while I recount a true story, which will confirm what that gentleman (pointing to the curate) and myself have observed."

To this proposal Don Quixote replied: "As this affair seems to bear something of the shadow of an adventure, I, for my part, will gladly give you the hearing, brother; and so will all those gentlemen, who are persons of taste, and lovers of curious novels, that surprize, delight, and entertain the sensible hearer; for I hope your story will certainly produce these agreeable effects: begin then, friend; we are all attention."

"By your leave," cried Sancho, "I will e'en betake myself, with this piece of pasty, to yonder brook, and lay in store for three days; for I have heard my master Don Quixote observe, that the squire of a knight-errant ought to eat as often and as much as he can; because they are frequently so bewildered in woods and forests, that it will take them six whole days to disengage themselves; and if a man's belly or his bags be not well lined with provision, there he may stay, as he often does, till he withers into perfect mummy." "You are in the right, Sancho," said the knight, "go where you will, and eat as much as you please; for my own part, my grosser appetite is satisfied, and now I want refreshment for the mind, which I shall enjoy in listening to this honest countryman's story." "We shall all share in the repast," replied the canon, who intreated the peasant to perform his promise.

Then the goatherd gave the goat, which he held by the horns, two slaps on the buttocks, saying, "Lie down by my side, you speckled nanny; we shall have time enough to return to the fold." The creature

seemed

seemed
sooner
in his
tive to
began

The fl

"T
which
count
and al
belove
what
(as h
had, o
and g
marve
natur
cradle
beaut
chant
spread
need
to di
king'
came
great
ther
great
prude
than
earth
beaut
count

seemed to understand his meaning; for he was no sooner set than she lay down very quietly, and looking in his face, gave him to understand that she was attentive to what he was going to say; upon which he began his story in these words:

CHAP. XXIV.

The story which the goatherd recounted to the conductors of Don Quixote.

“THREE leagues from this valley stands a village, which, though small, is one of the richest in all this country; and therein dwelt a farmer in great repute: and albeit respect follows worldly wealth, he was more beloved for his virtue than respected for his riches; but what he regarded as the best part of his good fortune (as he himself was wont to say) was a daughter he had, of such exceeding beauty, rare discretion, modesty and grace, that every one who saw and knew her, marvelled at the happy talents with which Heaven and nature had enriched her body and her soul: in the cradle she was handsome, and continually increased in beauty, till at the age of sixteen she was a most enchanting creature: the fame of her charms began to spread over all the neighbouring villages; but what need I say the neighbouring villages! it extended to distant cities, and even made its way into the king’s court, filling the ears of all sorts of people, who came from all parts to see her, as if she had been some great curiosity, or miracle-working image. Her father watched over her with great care, and she took great care of herself; for truly, a maiden’s own prudent reserve is a better guard upon her conduct than all the bolts, and spies, and padlocks upon earth. The father’s wealth and the daughter’s beauty moved a great many people, both in town and country, to demand her in marriage; but he, like one
who

who has the disposal of a rich jewel, was perplexed in his mind, and could not determine in favour of any one of the infinite number that solicited his consent. Among the crowd of her suitors I was one, who conceived great and flattering hopes of success; because her father knew me to be his townsman, of an honest family, in the flower of my age, rich in wealth, and in point of understanding not very poor. She was also courted by another young man of our town, who was in every respect my equal; so that her father was perplexed, and wavered in his choice, because he thought his daughter would be well bestowed upon either of us: wherefore, in order to deliver himself from this suspense, he resolved to communicate our demands to Leandra, (for that is the name of this wealthy maiden, who hath made me miserable;) and since we were equal in all qualifications, to refer the whole affair to the choice and decision of his beloved daughter. An example worthy to be followed by every father in the settlement of his children: not that I would have parents leave them to their own choice, in things that are manifestly wicked and base; but first propose a number of prudent schemes, out of which they may be allowed to fix upon that which is most to their liking. I know not to which of us Leandra gave the preference; this only I know, that her father put us off, on pretence of his daughter's tender years, in general terms, which neither laid him under any obligation, nor gave us any cause of complaint. I think proper to tell you that I am called Eugenio, and my rival Anselmo, that you may be acquainted with the names of the persons principally concerned in this tragedy, which is still depending: though one may easily foresee, that it must have a melancholy end.

But to return to my story: just about that time there came to our town one Vincent de la Rosa, the son of a poor labouring man that lived in the village; this
 Vincent,

Vince
 Italy,
 when
 capti
 his co
 doze
 pink
 power
 day h
 in an
 little
 are na
 oppo
 an ex
 and
 diffi
 mean
 who
 have
 diffi
 feath
 fooli
 beca
 He
 lar t
 all g
 ed:
 cour
 seen
 kille
 Mor
 mor
 Gar
 sand
 with
 won
 be c

Vincent, who was just returned from being a soldier in Italy, and other foreign parts, had been carried away when he was a boy about twelve years of age, by a captain that chanced to march through the town with his company : and now, after an absence of another dozen of years, he returned, in the garb of a soldier pinked up in a thousand colours, and bedecked with a power of glass toys and slender chains of steel. To-day he dressed himself out in one gay suit, to-morrow in another ; but all his finery and gewgaws were of little weight or value. The labouring people, who are naturally malicious, nay, when idleness gives them opportunity, downright malice itself observed and took an exact account of all his ornaments and fine apparel, and found that he had no more than three suits of different colours, with garters and hose ; but he found means to disguise them by such inventions, that one who had not been at the pains to detect him, would have sworn that he had appeared in more than ten different dresses, and in upwards of twenty plumes of feathers ; and you must not think it impertinent or foolish in me to give you this account of his clothes, because they bear a considerable share in the story. He used to seat himself upon a stone, under a tall poplar that grew in our market-place, and there keep us all gaping around him at the exploits which he recounted : if you would take his word for it, there was not a country on the face of the earth which he had not seen, nor a battle in which he had not served ; he had killed a greater number of Moors than ever Tunis or Morocco produced ; and, by his own account, fought more single combats than were ever maintained by Gante, Luna, Diego Garcia de Paredes, and a thousand more whom he named, gaining the victory in each, without losing one single drop of his blood ; then he would shew the marks of wounds, which though not to be distinguished, he gave us to understand were the effects

fects of musket-shot he had received in different actions and encounters ; finally, with incredible arrogance, he used to hout his own equals, even those who knew his extraction, and say, that his own arm was his father, his family the work of his own hands, and being a foldier, he owed nothing even to the king himself ; with all his boasting, he knew something of music, and could thrum upon the guitar, so as that some people said he made it speak ; but his talents did not end here ; for he was also a piece of a poet, and wrote ballads a league and a half long, upon every silly tale that happened in the village. Well then, this foldier, whom I have described, this Vincent de la Rosa, this Braggadocio, this gallant, this musician and poet, was often seen and observed by Leandra from the window of her apartment, that looked towards the market-place : she was captivated by the tinsel of his gaudy clothes, and enchanted by his ballads ; for he gave away twenty copies of each that he composed ; the feats he related of himself reached her ears ; in short (as the devil him self must certainly have ordained), she fell in love with him, even before he had the presumption to make any attempt upon her heart ; and as, in the affairs of love, every thing is easily accomplished by the man who is already in possession of the woman's affection, Leandra and Vincent soon came to a right understanding ; and before any one of her numerous admirers had the least inkling of her inclination, she had already gratified it, by leaving the house of her loving and indulgent father (mother she had none), and running away with the foldier, who triumphed in that enterprize, and more effectually, than in any one he had ever undertaken.

This event filled not only the whole village, but likewise all who heard of it, with admiration : I, for my part, was amazed, Anselmo astonished, the father overwhelmed with sorrow, and the relations with shame.

Justice,

Justice, however, being solicited, the troopers immediately took the road, examined every copse and thicket thereabouts, and, after a search of three days, found the giddy Leandra in the cave of a mountain, naked to the mock, and stripped of a great quantity of money and precious jewels, which she had carried off when she made her escape: when she was brought back to the presence of her afflicted father, and questioned about her misfortune, she frankly owned that Vincent de la Roca had imposed upon her; that, under promise of marriage, he had persuaded her to forsake her father's house, promising to conduct her to Naples, which, he said, was the most beautiful and flourishing city in the whole world; that she inadvertently and fondly believed his false professions, and robbing her father, put herself under his protection that same night she was missed, when he carried her to a rocky mountain, and confined her in the cave where she was found: she likewise affirmed that the soldier, without making any attempt upon her virtue, had stripped her of all she had, and left her in that forlorn condition; a circumstance that surprised all who heard it, the soldier's continence being so incredible; but she insisted upon it with such earnest asseverations, that the disconsolate father was in some sort comforted, making little account of the money he had lost, since his daughter was allowed to keep the jewel, which, when once lost, there is no hope of retrieving.

The same day that Leandra appeared, her father removed her from our eyes, and shut her up in a monastery of a neighbouring town, hoping that time would efface some part of the bad opinion his daughter had incurred: the tender years of Leandra served as an excuse for her misconduct, especially with those who are not concerned in the affair; but those who know her discretion and good sense, do not ascribe her fault to ignorance, but to mere levity, and the natural
dis-

disposition of women, which is always injudicious and imperfect. Leandra being thus secured, Anselmo's eyes were blind to every thing that could yield him pleasure; and mine remained in darkness, without the least glimpse of light to direct them to any agreeable object: the absence of Leandra increased our affliction and exhausted our patience; we cursed the soldier's finery, and exclaimed against her father's want of care: at length we agreed to quit the village, and repair to this valley, where he feeding a vast flock of sheep, which are his own property. and I tending a numerous fold of goats, which are also mine, we spend our lives under the cool shade of lofty trees, and give vent to our passion, either by singing in concert the praise or dispraise of the beautiful Leandra, or each by himself sighing in the lonely grove, and ejaculating his complaint to Heaven. In imitation of us, many more of Leandra's lovers have betaken themselves to these rugged mountains, and the exercise of the same employment; so that this spot seems to be transformed into a pastoral Arcadia, every field being crowded with shepherds and folds, and every corner resounding with the name of the fair Leandra. One curses and calls her fickle, inconstant, and immodest; a second condemns her credulity and lightness of behaviour; a third acquits and forgives her, while she is arraigned and reproached by a fourth; some celebrate her beauty, others find fault with her disposition: in short, she is censured and adored by them all; nay, to such a pitch hath their extravagance risen, that some of them complain of her disdain, though they never spoke to her; and others, in their lamentations, pretend to feel the rage of jealousy, which is a passion she never inspired; for, as I have already mentioned, her fault was known before her inclination was suspected: there is not the hollow of a rock, the margin of a rill, nor the shade of a tree, that is not occupied by some shepherd,

re.

reco
echo
the
Lea
perp
know
he t
of ju
ing
abse
the
verse
a m
ly to
sickl
mife
judg
them
addr
desp
itory
in th
you
in w
chee
agre

Of th
th
ph
su

TH
all th
with
V

recounting his misfortune to the winds ; wherever an echo can be formed, it repeats the name of Leandra ; the hills resound with Leandra ; the rivulets murmur Leandra : in short, Leandra keeps us all enchanted and perplexed, hoping we know not how, and dreading we know not what. Among the wrong-headed society, he that shews the least, though he has the greatest share of judgment, is my rival Anselmo, who, notwithstanding all the cause he has to be dissatisfied, complains of absence only, tuning his lamentation to the sound of the rebeck, which he touches with admirable skill, in verses that shew the excellence of his genius : I follow a more easy, and in my opinion a wiser course ; namely to inveigh against the levity of the female sex ; their fickleness, their double dealing, their rotten promises, their broken faith ; and finally, their want of judgment in bestowing their affections. These, gentlemen, are my reasons for the discourse you heard me address to my goat, whom (because she is a female) I despise, although she be the best of the fold ; this is the story I promised to recount : and if I have been prolix in the narration, I shall not be brief in what service you shall please to command : hard by is my cottage, in which I have plenty of new milk, and most savoury cheese, with abundance of the fruit in season, no less agreeable to the taste than to the view."

CHAP. XXV.

Of the quarrel that happened between Don Quixote and the goatherd, with the curious adventure of the disciplinants, which the knight happily atchieved with the sweat of his brow.

THIS story of the goatherd gave infinite pleasure to all that heard it, especially to the canon, who observed with admiration his manner of relating it, as distant

from the rustic phrase of a peasant, as near approaching to the polite stile of a courtier; and therefore, he said, the curate had justly observed, that the mountains sometimes produced learned men. Every body made proffers of service to Eugenio, but he that shewed himself most liberal in compliment was Don Quixote, who said to him, "Truly, brother goatherd, were it possible for me to undertake any new adventure, I would forthwith set forward in your behalf, and deliver Leandra from that monastery in which she is, doubtless, detained against her will, in spite of the abbess and all that should oppose my design, and would put her into your hands to be treated according to your good-will and pleasure, so far as is consistent with the laws of chivalry, by which all damsels are protected from wrongs: though I hope in God, that a malicious enchanter shall not so far prevail, but that he may be excelled in power by another of a more righteous disposition: and then, you may depend upon my favour and assistance, according to the duty of my profession, which is no other than to succour the wretched and the weak."

The goatherd stared at Don Quixote, and being struck with admiration at his rueful aspect and dishevelled locks, said to the barber who sat near him, "Signor, pray, who is that man who looks and talks so wildly?" "Who should it be," answered the barber, "but the renowned Don Quixote de la Mancha, the redresser of grievances, the righter of wrongs, the protector of damsels, the terror of giants, and thunderbolt of war." "That discourse," replied the peasant, "puts me in mind of those books which treat of knights-errant, who were commonly distinguished by such titles as you bestow on that man: but, I suppose, you are pleased to be merry, or else the apartments of this poor gentleman's skull are but indifferently furnished."

"You are a most impudent rascal! (cried the knight,

knight, overhearing what he said,) it is your skull that is unfurnished and unsound; but mine is more pregnant than the abominable whore that brought you forth." So saying, he snatched up a loaf, and flung it at the goatherd with such fury that he levelled his nose with his face.

Eugenio, who did not understand raillery, finding himself maltreated in earnest, without any respect for the carpet, table-cloth, or company, leaped upon the knight, and laying hold of his collar, with both hands, would certainly have strangled him, if Sancho Panza had not at that instant sprung to his master's assistance, and pulling his antagonist backwards, tumbled him over upon the table, where plates, cups, victuals, wine, and all went to wreck. Don Quixote, finding himself disengaged, arose, and in his turn got upon the goatherd, who being battered by the master, and kicked by the man, was creeping about on all four, in quest of a table knife, with which he intended to take some bloody revenge; but was prevented by the canon and curate; the goatherd, however, managed matters so, as that he got the knight under him, when he rained such a shower of kicks and cuffs upon his carcase, that our hero's countenance was as much overflowed with blood as his own: the curate and canon were ready to burst with laughing, the troopers capered about with joy, and the whole company hallooed, according to the practice of the spectators, when two dogs are engaged: Sancho Panza alone was distracted, because he could not get out of the clutches of one of the canon's servants, who hindered him from assisting his master. In fine, when every body was thus regaled and rejoiced, except the combatants, who worried each other, they heard a trumpet utter such a melancholy note, that they could not help turning their heads, and looking towards the place from whence the sound seemed to come; but he on whom it made the great-

est impresson was Don Quixote, who, though lying under his antagonist, very much against his inclination, and more than sufficiently pummelled, said to the goatherd, "Brother devil (for sure thou canst be nothing else, who has strength and valour sufficient to overcome my efforts), I beg a truce for one hour only; because the doleful sound of that trumpet which salutes our ears, seems to summon me to some new adventure."

The goatherd being by this time heartily tired of drubbing, as well as of being drubbed, immediately complied with his request; and Don Quixote starting up, directed his view towards the place whence the sound seemed to issue, where he descried a great number of people dressed in white, like disciplinants, coming down the side of a neighbouring hill. That year the heavens had withheld refreshing showers from the earth; and through all the villages of that district the people instituted processions, disciplines, and prayers, beseeching God to open the fountains of his mercy, and favour them with rain: for this purpose, the inhabitants of a neighbouring village were then going in procession to a holy hermitage built on an eminence that skirted the valley; and Don Quixote seeing the strange dress of the disciplinants*, without recollecting that he had frequently seen such habits before, concluded the whole to be an adventure, which it was the province of him, as a knight-errant, to atchieve: what served to confirm him in this notion was an image clothed in black, which was carried before them, and which he supposed to be some princess, whom those discourteous robbers were carrying off by force.

This whim no sooner entered his brain, than he ran with great agility to Rozinante, who was feeding very quietly, and taking the bridal and shield, which

* Persons hired to whip themselves on such occasions.

hung upon the pommel of the saddle, clapt the bit in his mouth in a twinkling, and demanding his sword from Sancho mounted his steed and braced his target, calling aloud to the company, "Now, honourable gentlemen, ye shall perceive the importance of those who profess the order of knight-errantry! now, I say, ye shall, in the deliverance of that excellent lady, who is at present a captive, behold how much knight-errants ought to be esteemed."

So saying, he clapt heels to Rozinante (spurs he had none), and at a hand-gallop (for we do not find in this true history, that ever Rozinante went full speed) rode up to attack the disciplinants. Though the canon, curate, and barber made efforts to detain him, they found it impracticable; he was even deaf to the cries of Sancho, who bawled with great vociferation: "Where are you going signor Don Quixote? what devil possesses and provokes you to act against our catholic faith! take notice—a plague upon me! take notice, that this is no other than a procession of disciplinants, and that lady carried on the bier the blessed image of the immaculate virgin! Consider, signor, what you are about; for sure I am, you do not know!"

In vain did Sancho strain his lungs: his master was so intent upon overtaking the apparitions, and setting the lady in black at liberty, that he heard not one syllable; nor if he had, would he have returned, even if the king had commanded him so to do. When he approached the procession, he stopped Rozinante, who was already out of breath, and with a hoarse disordered voice, pronounced, "You there, who perhaps disguise yourself for no good, stop, and give ear to what I am going to say."

Those who carried the image were the first that halted, and one of the four priests who sung the litanies, observing the strange aspect of Don Quixote,

the leanness of Rozinante, with other ridiculous circumstances belonging to both, answered in these words: "Friend, if you have any thing to say, speak quickly; for these our brethren are all this while scourging their own flesh; and we cannot, nor is it reasonable we should tarry to hear any thing that cannot be comprehended in two words." "I will comprehend what I have to say in one," replied the knight; "and it is this: I command you instantly to set free that beautiful lady, whose tears and melancholy deportment clearly demonstrate that you are carrying her off, contrary to her inclination, after having done her some notorious wrong; and I, who was born to redress such grievances, will not suffer you to proceed one step farther, until she shall have obtained that liberty she deserves."

From these words, concluding that he must be some madman, all of them began to laugh very heartily; and their mirth acting as a train of gunpowder to the knight's choler, he drew his sword, and without uttering another word, attacked the bearers; one of whom, leaving his share of the load to his companions, opposed himself to this aggressor, brandishing a fork or pole, on which (when they were wearied) they supported the bier. Don Quixote, with a furious back stroke, cut this implement in two; but with the piece which remained in the hand of the defendant, received such a thwack upon the shoulders above his sword arm, that his buckler was unable to sustain the shock of such a rude assault, and down came the poor knight in a most lamentable condition.

Sancho Panza, who came puffing after his master, seeing him fall, called aloud to his antagonist to forbear; for he was a poor enchanted knight, who had never done the least harm to man, woman, or child; but the peasant's forbearance was not owing to this exclamation of the squire, so much as to the situation

of

of Don Quixote, who neither moved hand nor foot ; so that believing he had done his business, he hastily gathered up his frock, and fled through the field as nimble as a buck. By this time the whole company were come up to the place where Don Quixote lay ; and those belonging to the procession seeing so many people running towards them, accompanied by the troopers with their cross-bows, began to be in dread of some mischievous event, and formed themselves into a circle around the image : then the disciplinants, lifting up their hoods, and wielding their scourges, and the priests their long tapers, waited the assault with full determination to defend themselves, and, if possible, act offensively against all who should attack them. But fortune disposed of things more favourably than they expected ; for all that Sancho did, was to throw himself upon the body of his master, who, he believed, was actually dead, and utter the most doleful and ludicrous lamentation that ever was heard. The curate was immediately known by a brother of the cloth, who belonged to the procession, and this acquaintance dispelled the apprehension which both squadrons had begun to conceive. Our licentiate told his friend in a few words who Don Quixote was, upon which he and the whole crowd of disciplinants went to see whether or not the poor knight was dead, and heard Sancho Panza with tears in his eyes, lamenting in these words : “ O ! flower of chivalry, who, by the single stroke of a cudgel, hast finished the career of thy well spent life ! O ! thou honour of thy family, thou glory of la Mancha, ay, and of the whole world, which being deprived of thee, will soon be filled with evil doers, who will prosper without fear of chastisement for their wicked deeds ! Oh ! thou wast more liberal than all the Alexanders that ever lived ! for thou gavest me, for eight months service only, the best island that ever the sea surrounded.

Oh !

Oh ! thou wast humble with the haughty, and haughty with the humble; tempting dangers, enduring disgraces, in love without cause, imitating the good, scourging the wicked, a professed enemy to every thing that was base ; in short, a knight-errant, and that is every thing in one word !

The cries and groans of Sancho revived his master, and the first words he pronounced were these : “ He who is condemned to live absent from thee, most amiable Dulcinea ! is subjected to much greater hardships than these. Friend Sancho, help to lay me on the enchanted car ! for I am incapable of pressing Rozinante’s saddle, this whole shoulder being crushed to pieces.” “ That I’ll do very willingly, dear master,” replied the squire, “ and let us return to our own habitation, in company of these gentlemen, who wish you well ; and there we will lay a scheme for another sally, which I hope will be more fortunate and creditable.” “ You are in the right, Sancho,” replied Don Quixote, “ and it will be very prudent in us to let the malign influence of the stars pass over.”

The canon, curate, and barber, approved of his intention, and being extremely diverted with the squire’s simplicity, conveyed the knight to his former situation in the waggon. The procession was formed anew, and set forwards accordingly ; the goatherd took his leave of the company, the troopers being unwilling to go farther, were paid by the curate for their trouble ; the canon having intreated the priest to inform him by letter of Don Quixote’s fate, with regard to the continuation or cure of his extravagance, bade him farewell, and proceeded on his journey ; in short there was a general separation, till at length the curate, barber, Don Quixote and Panza, were left by themselves, with the trusty Rozinante, who, with the patience of his master, bore and beheld every thing that passed.

The

The waggoner yoking his oxen, accommodated the knight with a truss of hay, and with his usual phlegm jogged on according to the priest's directions, till at the end of six days, they arrived at their own village, which they entered about noon; and it chancing to be Sunday, the market-place through which they were obliged to pass was crowded with people, who running to see what was in the cage, recognized their townsman, and were struck with astonishment. A boy ran immediately to his housekeeper and niece, whom when he informed of their master's arrival, in a most meagre, withered condition, stretched upon a truss of hay, in a waggon; it was a piteous thing to hear the cries that were uttered by these worthy ladies, who buffeted themselves through vexation, and vented bitter curses against the wicked books of chivalry; which lamentations, buffetings, and curses, were repeated with greater violence than ever, when they saw the knight enter his own gate.

Sancho Panza's wife, who had got intimation that he was gone with Don Quixote in quality of his squire, hearing of his return, ran strait to her husband, and the first question she asked was, Whether or not the ass was in good health? when the squire answered, that the ass was in better health than his master. "Thanks be to God," cried she, "for that and all his other mercies. But now tell me, friend, what good you have got by your squireship! have you brought home a new petticoat for me, or shoes for your children?" "I have brought no such matters, my dear," replied Sancho, "but things of greater consideration and importance." "I am glad of that, with all my heart," said the wife; "pray shew me these things of greater consideration and importance, that the sight of them may rejoice my heart, which hath been so sad and discontented all the weary time of your being away." "You shall see them at home," answered Sancho;

Sancho; "and heark'ee wife, make yourself easy for the present; for as it please God that we set out again in quest of adventures, you shall speedily behold your husband an earl, or governor of an island; I don't mean your common islands, but one of the best that ever was seen." "The Lord in heaven grant it, husband! for I am sure we have need enough of such windfalls: but tell me, what is an island; for truly, I know not the meaning of the word." "Honey was not made for the mouth of an ass, said the squire: you shall see what it is, all in good time, my dear; ay, and admire to hear all your vassals call you, my lady." "What is that you say, Sancho, of ladies, islands, and vassals?" cried Joan Panza; for that was the name of the squire's wife, though she was not related to Sancho before marriage; but it is the custom in la Mancha for the women to take the names of their husbands. "Don't be in such a hurry to know every thing, Joan," replied the squire; "it is sufficient that I tell thee nothing but truth; let this therefore stop that mouth of thine. Mean time, however, I care not if I tell thee, that it is one of the most pleasant occupations in the world for an honourable person, like me, to be squire to a knight errant, when he is in quest of adventures. True it is, the greatest part of them do not fall out quite so much to one's liking as one could wish; for, out of an hundred in which we are engaged, ninety nine are generally cross and unfortunate. That I know by experience, having been sometimes threshed, and sometimes blanketed; but howsoever, it is a curious pastime to be always in expectation of adventures, crossing huge mountains, searching woods, climbing rocks, visiting castles, lodging at inns, where we live at hack and manger, and the devil a farthing to pay."

While this conversation passed between Sancho and his wife, the housekeeper and niece received Don Quixote,

Quix
old
being
laid
with
espec
them
bring
raise
curse
Hea
lies
distr
as fo
was
B
quin
cern
coul
cou
moi
Qui
Sar
tou
wor
his
and
eve
wh
he
tha
par
ter
plo
nar
ow
gy

Quixote, whom they undressed and put to bed in his old chamber, while he eyed them askance, without being able to comprehend where he was. The curate laid his injunctions on the niece to cherish her uncle with great tenderness, and charged them both to take especial care that he might not escape again, giving them an account of the trouble he had been at in bringing him back to his own house. Here they raised their voices again in concert, renewing their curses upon the books of chivalry, and beseeching Heaven to confound the authors of such madness and lies to the lowest pit of hell: in short, they were half-distracted with the apprehension of losing him again, as soon as his health should be re-established; and this was actually the case.

But the author of this history, although he enquired with the utmost curiosity and diligence concerning the actions of Don Quixote in his third fall, could never find any satisfactory and authentic account of them; only, fame hath preserved some memoirs in la Mancha, by which it appears that Don Quixote, when he set out the third time, went to Saragossa, where he was present at a most celebrated tournament, in which many things happened to him worthy of his genius and valour: but with regard to his death and burial, he could obtain no information; and must have remained entirely ignorant of that event, had he not luckily met with an old physician, who had in his custody a leaden box, which he said he found under the foundation of an ancient hermitage that was repairing. This box contained some skins of parchment, on which were written in Gothic characters and Castilian verse, many of our knight's exploits, with a description of Dulcinea's beauty, Rozinante's figure, Sancho's fidelity, and Don Quixote's own funeral, celebrated by divers epitaphs, and panegyrics on his life and morals. All that could be read
and

and fairly copied are those which are here inserted by the faithful author of this new and surprising history, who, in recompence for the immense trouble he has undergone in his enquiries, and in examining the archives of la Mancha, that he might publish it with more certainty, desires the reader to favour him with the same credit which intelligent persons give to those books of chivalry that pass so currently in the world! and herewith he will rest fully satisfied; and perhaps be animated to search after, and find out other histories, if not as authentic, at least as full of invention and entertainment.

The verses which were written in the first skin of parchment found in the leaden box were these.

The Academicians of Argamasilla, a town of la Mancha, on the Life and Death of the valiant Don Quixote de la Mancha, *hoc scripserunt.*

Monicongo, Academician of Argamasilla, on the Sepulchre of Don Quixote.

EPITAPH.

THE bulky that la Mancha deck'd
 With spoils that shame the Cretan Jason,
 Whose judgment ripe, and wit uncheck'd
 The trumpet of renown shall blazon;
 That arm, whose vaour did extend
 To Gaeta, from remote Cathy,
 That muse which did the welkin rend
 With verse which brazen plates display;
 Who Amadis left far behind,
 And deem'd Galaor a mere baby,
 Whose valour with such lustre shin'd
 As shew'd ev'n Belianis shabby;
 He that on Rozinante rode,
 Now mingles with this clay-cold clod!

Pani-

Paniguado, academician of Argamafilla, in praise of
Dulcinea del Toboso.

SON G.

THE maid you see with cheeks so blousy,
High chested, vigorous, and frouzy,
Dulcinea, fam'd Toboso's princess,
Don Quixote's gen'rous flame evinces:
For her, on foot, he did explore
The fable mountain o'er and o'er,
Through many a weary field did halt,
And all through Rozinante's fault.
Hard fate! that such a dame should die
In spite of him and chivalry;
That he whose deeds ev'n stones proclaim,
Should mourn a disappointed flame!

Caprichoso, a most ingenious academician of Argamafilla, in praise of Rozinante, the renowned steed of Don Quixote de la Mancha.

ON a proud-trunk of adamant,
Whose bloody branches smell'd of war
La Mancha's frantic wight did plant
His standard glitt'ring from afar.
There hung his arms, there gleam'd his sword,
That wont to level, hack and hew,
Yet shall the wond'ring muse afford
For new exploits, a stile that's new.
Let Gaul of Amadis be proud,
Greece boasts the champions she hath bore;
Don Quixote triumphs o'er the crowd
Of all the warlike knights of yore.
For neither Gaul nor Greece can vie
With fam'd La Mancha's chivalry.

CL. II.

D d

Ev'n

and fairly copied are those which are here inserted by the faithful author of this new and surprising history, who, in recompence for the immense trouble he has undergone in his enquiries, and in examining the achievements of la Mancha, that he might publish it with more certainty, desires the reader to savour him with the same credit which intelligent persons give to those books of chivalry that pass so currently in the world! and herewith he will rest fully satisfied; and perhaps be animated to search after, and find out other histories, if not as authentic, at least as full of invention and entertainment.

The verses which were written in the first skin of parchment found in the leaden box were these.

The Academicians of Argamasilla, a town of la Mancha, on the Life and Death of the valiant Don Quixote de la Mancha, *hoc scripserunt.*

Monicongo, Academician of Argamasilla, on the Sepulchre of Don Quixote.

EPITAPH.

THE bulky that la Mancha deck'd
 With spoils that shame the Cretan Jason,
 Whose judgment ripe, and wit uncheck'd
 The trumpet of renown shall blazon;
 That arm, whose vaour did extend
 To Gaeta, from remote Cathy,
 That muse which did the welkin rend
 With verse which brazen plates display;
 Who Amadis left far behind,
 And deem'd Galaor a mere baby,
 Whose valour with such lustre shin'd
 As shew'd ev'n Belianis shabby;
 He that on Rozinante rode,
 Now mingles with this clay-cold clod!

Pani-

Paniguado, academician of Argamafilla, in praise of
Dulcinea del Toboso.

SON G.

THE maid you see with cheeks so blousy,
High chested, vigorous, and frouzy,
Dulcinea, fam'd Toboso's princess,
Don Quixote's gen'rous flame evinces:
For her, on foot, he did explore
The fable mountain o'er and o'er,
Through many a weary field did halt,
And all through Rozinante's fault.
Hard fate! that such a dame should die
In spite of him and chivalry;
That he whose deeds ev'n stones proclaim,
Should mourn a disappointed flame!

Caprichoso, a most ingenious academician of Argamafilla, in praise of Rozinante, the renowned steed of Don Quixote de la Mancha.

ON a proud trunk of adamant,
Whose bloody branches smell'd of war
La Mancha's frantic wight did plant
His standard glitt'ring from afar.
There hung his arms, there gleam'd his sword,
That wont to level, hack and hew,
Yet shall the wond'ring muse afford
For new exploits, a stile that's new.
Let Gaul of Amadis be proud,
Greece boasts the champions she hath bore;
Don Quixote triumphs o'er the crowd
Of all the warlike knights of yore.
For neither Gaul nor Greece can vie
With fam'd La Mancha's chivalry.

CL. II.

D d

Ev'n

Ev'n Rozinante wears the bay :
Let Brilladore and Bayard bray *.

Burlador, and Argamasilian academician, on Sancho Panza.

SONG.

HERE Sancho view, of body small,
But great in worth, in action clear,
The best and simplest squire of all
The world e'er saw, I vow and swear.
An earl he surely might have been,
Had not this knavish age of brass,
With insolence and envious spleen,
Conspir'd against him and his ass :
That ass ! on which he gently trotted
At gentle Rozinante's tail :
Vain man ! with flatt'ring hope besotted,
How, in a dream, thy prospects fail !

Cachidiablo, academician of Argamasilla, on the sepulture of Don Quixote.

EPITAPH.

ON Rozinante's back
The knight that whilome travel'd
Thro' highway, path, and track,
Is here bemir'd and gravel'd :
And eke as stiff as he,
The block of Sancho Panza,
A trusty squire perie !
As ever mortal man saw.

* The horse of Orlando Furioso was called Brigliadoro : as Bayardo was the name of the steed belonging to Ruggiero, the second if not the first hero in Ariosto's incomparable poem.

Tiquitoc, academician of Argamasilla, on the sculpture of Dulcinea del Toboso.

HERE lies Dulcinea, once so plump,
But now her fat all melts away ;
For death, with an inhuman thump,
Has turn'd her into dust and clay.
Of a true breed she surely sprung,
And wanted not external grace ;
Don Quixote's heart with love she stung,
And shone the glory of her race.

These were all the verses which could be read ; the rest being worm-eaten, were delivered to an academician, that he might attempt to unravel their meaning by conjecture. This task, we understand, he has performed with infinite pains and study, intending to publish them to the world, in expectation of the third fall of Don Quixote.

“ Forse altri cantera con miglior plettro.”

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

20 JU 66

